# Operator algebras and conformal field theory 

## III. Fusion of positive energy representations of $L S U(N)$ using bounded operators

Antony Wassermann<br>Department of Pure Mathematics and Mathematical Statistics, University of Cambridge, 16 Mill Lane, Cambridge CB2 1SB, UK

Oblatum 1-III-1996 \& 11-III-1997

## Contents

I. Positive energy representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ ..... 477
II. Local loop groups and their von Neumann algebras ..... 491
III. The basic ordinary differential equation ..... 505
IV. Vector and dual vector primary fields ..... 513
V. Connes fusion of positive energy representations ..... 525
References ..... 536

## 1. Introduction

This is one of a series of papers devoted to the study of conformal field theory from the point of view of operator algebras (see [41] and [42] for an overview of the whole series). In order to make the paper accessible and self-contained, we have not assumed a detailed knowledge of either operator algebras or conformal field theory, including short-cuts and direct proofs wherever possible. This research programme was originally motivated by V. Jones' suggestion that there might be a deeper 'operator algebraic' explanation of the coincidence between certain unitary representations of the infinite braid group that had turned up independently in the theory of subfactors, exactly solvable models in statistical mechanics and conformal field theory (CFT). To understand why there should be any link between these subjects, recall that, amongst other things, the classical 'additive' theory of von Neumann algebras [26] was developed to provide a framework for studying unitary representations of Lie groups. In concrete examples, for example the Plancherel theorem for semisimple groups, this abstract framework had to be complemented by a considerably harder analysis of intertwining operators
and associated differential equations. The link between CFT and operator algebras comes from the recently developed 'multiplicative' (quantum?) theory of von Neumann algebras. This theory has three basic sources: firstly the algebraic approach to quantum field theory (QFT) of Doplicher, Haag and Roberts [10]; then in Connes' theory of bimodules and their tensor products of fusion [9]; and lastly in Jones' theory of subfactors [18]. Our work reconciles these ideas with the theory of primary fields, one of the fundamental concepts in CFT. Our work has the following consequences, some of which will be taken up in subsequent papers:
(1) Several new constructions of subfactors.
(2) Non-trival algebraic QFT's in $1+1$ dimensions with finitely many sectors and non-integer statistical (or quantum) dimension ("algebraic CFT").
(3) A definition of quantum invariant theory without using quantum groups at roots of unity.
(4) A computable and manifestly unitary definition of fusion for positive energy representations ("Connes fusion") making them into a tensor category.
(5) Analytic properties of primary fields ("constructive CFT").

To our knowledge, no previous work has suceeded in integrating the theory of primary fields with the ideas of algebraic QFT nor in revealing the very simple analytic structure of primary fields. As we explain below, the main thrust of our work is the explicit computation of Connes fusion of positive energy representations. Finiteness of statistical dimension (or Jones index) is a natural consequence, not a technical mathematical inconvenience. It is perhaps worth emphasising that the theory of operator algebras only provides a framework for studying CFT. As in the case of group representations, it must be complemented by a detailed analysis of certain interwining operators, the primary fields, and their associated differential equations. As we discuss later, however, the operator algebraic point of view can be used to reveal basic positivity and unitarity properties in CFT that have previously seem to have been overlooked.

Novel features of our treatment are the construction of representations and primary fields from fermions. This makes unitarity of the representations and boundedness properties of smeared vector primary fields obvious. The only formal "vertex algebra" aspects of the theory of primary fields borrowed from [39] are the trivial proof of uniqueness and the statement of the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation; our short derivation of the KZ equation circumvents the well-known contour integral proof implicit but not given in [39]. The proof that the axioms of algebraic QFT are satisfied in the non-vacuum sectors is new and relies heavily on our fermionic construction; the easier properties in the vacuum sector have been known for some time [7, 15]. The treatment of braiding relations for smeared primary fields is new but inspired by the Bargmann-Hall-Wightman theorem [20, 36]. To our knowledge, the application of Connes fusion to a non-trivial model in QFT
is quite new. Our definition is a slightly simplified version of Connes' original definition, tailor-made for CFT because of the "four-point function formula"; no general theory is required.

The finite-dimensional irreducible unitary representations of $S U(N)$ and their tensor product rules are well known to mathematicians and physicists. The representations $V_{f}$ are classified by signatures or Young diagrams $f_{1} \geq f_{2} \geq \cdots \geq f_{N}$ and, if $V_{[k]}=\lambda^{k} \mathbb{C}^{N}$, we have the tensor product rule $V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g>_{k} f} V_{g}$, where $g$ ranges over all diagrams that can be obtained by adding $k$ boxes to $f$ with no two in the same row. For the infinitedimensional loop group $L S U(N)=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, S U(N)\right)$, the appropriate unitary representations to consider in place of finite-dimensional representations are the projective unitary representations of positive energy. Positive energy representations form one of the most important foundation stones of conformal field theory [5, 12, 23]. The classification of positive energy representations is straightforward and has been known for some time now. A positive energy representation $H_{f}$ is classified by its level $\ell$, a positive integer, and its signature $f$, which must satisfy the permissibility condition $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$. Extending the tensor product rules to representations of a fixed level, however, presents a problem. It is already extremely difficult just giving a coherent definition of the tensor product, since the naive one fails hopelessly because it does not preserve the level. On the other hand physicists have known for years how to 'fuse' representations in terms of short range expansions of products of associated quantum fields (primary fields). We provide one solution to this 'problem of fusion' in conformal field theory by giving a mathematically sound definition of the tensor product that ties up with the intuitive picture of physicists. Our solution relates positive energy representations of loop groups to bimodules over von Neumann algebras. Connes defined a tensor product operation on such bimodules - "Connes fusion" - which translates directly into a definition of fusion for positive energy representations. The general fusion rules follow from the particular rules $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g>_{k} f} H_{g}$, where $g$ must now also be permissible. In this way the level $\ell$ representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ exhibit a structure similar to that of the irreducible representations of a finite group. There are several other approaches to fusion of positive energy representations, notably those of Segal [35] and Kazhdan \& Lusztig [22]. Our picture seems to be a unitary boundary value of Segal's holomorphic proposal for fusion, based on a disc with two smaller discs removed. When the discs shrink to points on the Riemann sphere, Segal's definition should degenerate to the algebraic geometric fusion of Kazhdan \& Lusztig. We now give an informal summary of the paper.

Fermions. Let Cliff $(H)$ be the Clifford algebra of a complex Hilbert space $H$, generated by a linear map $f \mapsto a(f)(f \in H)$ satisfying $a(f) a(g)+$ $a(g) a(f)=0$ and $a(f) a(g)^{*}+a(g)^{*} a(f)=(f, g)$. It acts irreducibly on Fock space $\Lambda H$ via $a(f) \omega=f \wedge \omega$. Other representations of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$ arise by considering the real linear map $c(f)=a(f)+a(f)^{*}$ which satisfies
$c(f) c(g)+c(g) c(f)=2 \operatorname{Re}(f, g)$; note that $a(f)=\frac{1}{2}(c(f)-i c(i f))$. Since $c$ relies only on the underlying real Hilbert space $H_{\mathbb{R}}$, complex structures on $H_{\mathbb{R}}$ commuting with $i$ give new irreducible representations of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$. The structures correspond to projections $P$ with multiplication by $i$ given by $i$ on $P H$ and $-i$ on $(P H)^{\perp}$. The corresponding representation $\pi_{P}$ is given by $\pi_{P}(a(f))=\frac{1}{2}(c(f)-i c(i(2 P-I) f))$. Using ideas that go back to Dirac and von Neumann, we give our own short proof of I. Segal's equivalence criterion: if $P-Q$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator, then $\pi_{P}$ and $\pi_{Q}$ are unitarily equivalent. On the other hand if $u \in U(H)$, then $a(u f)$ and $a(u g)$ also satisfy the complex Clifford algebra relations. Thus $a(f) \rightarrow a(u f)$ gives an automorphism of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$. We say that this "Bogoliubov" automorphism is implemented in $\pi_{P}$ iff $\pi_{P}(a(u f))=U \pi_{P}(a(f)) U^{*}$ for some unitary $U$. This gives a projective representation of the subgroup of implementable unitaries $U_{P}(H)$. Segal's equivalence criterion leads immediately to a quantisation criterion: if $[u, P]$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator, then $u \in U_{P}(H)$.

Positive energy representations. Let $G=S U(N)$ and let $L G=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, G\right)$ be the loop group, with the rotation group $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ acting as automorphisms. If $H=L^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N}\right)$ and $P$ is the projection onto Hardy space $H^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N}\right)$, $\operatorname{LSU}(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1} \subset U_{P}(H) \quad$ so we get a projective representation $\pi_{P}^{\otimes \ell}: L U(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1} \rightarrow P U\left(\mathscr{F}^{\otimes \ell}\right)$ where $\mathscr{F}$ denotes Fock space $\Lambda H_{P}$. Now Rot $S^{1}$ acts with positive energy, where an action $U_{\theta}$ on $H$ is said to have positive energy if $H=\bigoplus_{n \geq 0} H(n)$ with $U_{\theta} \xi=e^{i n \theta} \xi$ for $\xi \in H(n), H(n)$ is finite-dimensional and $H(0) \neq(0)$. This implies that $\mathscr{F}^{\otimes \ell}$ splits as a direct sum of irreducibles $H_{i}$, called the level $\ell$ positive energy representations. The $H_{i}$ 's are classified by their lowest energy subspaces $H_{i}(0)$, which are irreducible modules for the constant loops $\operatorname{SU}(N)$. Their signatures $f_{1} \geq f_{2} \geq \cdots \geq f_{N}$ must satisfy $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$, so $\mathscr{F}_{V}^{\otimes \ell}$ has only finitely many inequivalent irreducible summands. This classification is achieved by defining an infinitesimal action of the algebraic Lie algebra $L^{0} \mathfrak{g}$ on the finite energy subspace $H^{0}=\sum H(n)$ using bilinear terms $a(f) a(g)^{*}$. Our main contribution here is to match up these operators with the skew-adjoint operators predicted by analysis. The quantisation criterion also implies that the Möbius transformations of determinant 1 act projectively on each positive energy representation compatibly with $L G$. The vacuum representation $H_{0}$ corresponds to the trivial representation of $G$; the Möbius transformations of determinant -1 also act on $H_{0}$, but this time by conjugate-linear isometries. This presentation of the theory of positive energy representations is adequate for the needs of this paper; in [42] we show from scratch that any irreducible positive energy representation of $L S U(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ arises as a subrepresentation of some $\mathscr{F}{ }_{V}^{\otimes \ell}$.
von Neumann algebras. We briefly summarise those parts of the general theory of operator algebras that are background for this paper. (They will serve only as motivation, since all the advanced results we need will be proved directly for local fermion or loop group algebras.) A von Neumann
algebra is simply the commutant $\mathscr{S}^{\prime}=\{T \in B(H): T x=x T$ for all $x \in \mathscr{S}\}$ of a subset $\mathscr{S}$ of $B(H)$ with $\mathscr{S}^{*}=\mathscr{S}$. Typically $\mathscr{S}$ will be a *-subalgebra of $B(H)$ or a subgroup of $U(H)$; the von Neumann algebra generated by $\mathscr{S}$ is then just $\mathscr{S}^{\prime \prime}$. A von Neumann algebra $M$ is called a factor if its centre contains only scalar operators. Modules over a factor were classified by Murray and von Neumann [26] using a dimension function, the range of values giving an invariant of the factor: the non-negative integers (type I), the non-negative reals (type II) and $\{0, \infty\}$ (type III). Further structure comes from the modular operators $\Delta^{i t}$ and $J$ of Tomita-Takesaki [8]: if $\Omega$ is a cyclic vector for $M$ and $M^{\prime}$ and $S=J \Delta^{1 / 2}$ is the polar decomposition of the $\operatorname{map} S: M \Omega \rightarrow M \Omega, a \Omega \mapsto a^{*} \Omega$, then $J M J=M^{\prime}$ and $\Delta^{i t} M \Delta^{-i t}=M$. On the one hand the operators $\Delta^{i t}$ provide a further invariant of type III factors, the Connes spectrum $\bigcap_{\Omega} \operatorname{Spec} \Delta_{\Omega}^{i t}$, a closed subgroup of $\mathbb{R}$ [9]; see also [42]; while on the other hand $J$ makes the underlying Hilbert space $H_{0}$ into a bimodule over $M$, the vacuum bimodule, with the action of the opposite algebra $M^{\text {op }}$ given by $a \mapsto J a^{*} J$. Bimodules are closely related to subfactors and endomorphisms: a bimodule defines a subfactor by the inclusion $M^{\mathrm{op}} \subset M^{\prime}$; and an endomorphism $\rho: M \rightarrow M$ can be used to define a new bimodule structure on $H_{0}$. Connes fusion [9] gives an associative tensor product operation on bimodules that generalises composition of endomorphisms: given bimodules $X$ and $Y$, their fusion $X \boxtimes Y$ is the completion of $\operatorname{Hom}_{M^{\text {op }}}\left(H_{0}, X\right) \otimes \operatorname{Hom}_{M}\left(H_{0}, Y\right)$ with respect to the pre-inner product $\left\langle x_{1} \otimes y_{1}, x_{2} \otimes y_{2}\right\rangle=\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1} y_{2}^{*} y_{1} \Omega, \Omega\right)$. Roughly speaking Jones, Ocneanu and Popa [18, 19, 29, 42] proved that an irreducible bimodule is classified by the tensor category it generates under fusion, provided the category contains only finitely many isomorphism classes of irreducible bimodules.

Modular theory for fermions. For fermions and bosons, modular theory provides the most convenient framework for proving the much older result in algebraic quantum field theory known as "Haag-Araki duality". This deals with the symmetry between observables in a region and its (space-like) complement. As in [24], we consider more generally a modular subspace $K$ of a complex Hilbert space $H$, i.e. a closed real subspace such that $K \cap i K=(0)$ and $K+i K$ is dense in $H$. (Thus $K=\overline{M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega}$ in TomitaTakesaki theory.) If $S=J \Delta^{1 / 2}$ is the polar decomposition of the map $S: K+i K \rightarrow K+i K, \xi+i \eta \mapsto \xi-i \eta$, then $J K=i K^{\perp}$ and $\Delta^{i t} K=K$; in the text following [33] we avoid unbounded operators by taking the equivalent definitions $J=$ phase $(E-F)$ and $\Delta^{i t}=(2 I-E-F)^{i t}(E+F)^{i t}$, where $E$ and $F$ are the projections onto $K$ and $i K$. The modular operators $J$ and $\Delta^{i t}$ are uniquely characterised by the Kubo-Martin-Schwinger (KMS) condition: commuting operators $J$ and $\Delta^{i t}$ give the modular operators if $\Delta^{i t} K=K$ and, for each $\xi \in K, f(t)=\Delta^{i t} \xi$ extends to a bounded continuous function on the strip $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic in the interior, with $f(t-i / 2)=J f(t)$.

This theory can be used to prove an abstract result, implicit in the work of Araki [1,2]. Let $K$ be a modular subspace of $H$ and let $M(K)$ be the von

Neumann algebra on $\Lambda H$ generated by the operators $c(\xi)$ for $\xi \in H$. Then $M\left(K^{\perp}\right)$ is the graded commutant of $M(K)$ ("Araki duality") and the modular operators for $M(K)$ on $\Lambda H$ come from the quantisations of the corresponding operators for $K$. This reduces computations to "one-particle states", i.e. the prequantised Hilbert space. We then perform the prequantised computation explicitly when $H=L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ and $K=L^{2}(I, V)$, with $I$ a proper subinterval of $S^{1}$ with complement $I^{c}$. We deduce that if $M(I)$ is the von Neumann algebra on $\Lambda H_{P}$ generated by $a(f)$ 's with $f \in L^{2}(I, V)$, then $M\left(I^{c}\right)$ is the graded commutant of $M(I)$ (Haag-Araki duality) $\Delta^{i t}$ and $J$ come from the Möbius flow and flip fixing the end points of $I$.

Local loop groups. Let $L_{I} S U(N)$ be the subgroup of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ consisting of loops equal to 1 off $I$. The von Neumann algebra $N(I)$ generated by $L_{I} G$ is a subalgebra of the local fermion algebra $M(I)$ invariant under conjugation by the modular group $\Delta^{i t}$, since it is geometric. The modular operators of $N(I)$ can therefore be read off from those of $M(I)$ by a result in [37] ("Takesaki devissage"); we give our own short proof of a slightly modified version of Takesaki's result. We deduce the following properties of the local subgroups, predicted by the Doplicher-Haag-Roberts axioms [10]. The use of devissage, relating different models, is new and seems unavoidable in proving factoriality and local equivalence.

1. Locality In any positive energy representation $L_{I} S U(N)$ and $L_{I^{c}} S U(N)$ commute.
2. Factoriality. $\pi_{i}\left(L_{I} S U(N)\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is a factor if $\left(\pi_{i}, H_{i}\right)$ is an irreducible positive energy representation.
3. Local equivalence. There is a unique *-isomorphism $\pi_{i}: \pi_{0}\left(L_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow$ $\pi_{i}\left(L_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ sending $\pi_{0}(g)$ to $\pi_{i}(g)$ for $g \in L_{I} G$ such that $T a=\pi_{i}(a) T$ for all $T \in \operatorname{Hom}_{L_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, H_{i}\right)$.
4. Haag duality. If $\pi_{0}$ is the vacuum representation at level $\ell$, then $\pi_{0}\left(L_{I} S U(N)\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi_{0}\left(L_{I^{c}} S U(N)\right)^{\prime}$.
5. Irreducibility. Let $A$ be a finite subset of $S^{1}$ and let $L^{A} S U(N)$ be the subgroup of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ of loops trivial to all orders at points of $A$. If $\pi$ is positive energy, then $\pi\left(L^{A} S U(N)\right)^{\prime}=\pi(L S U(N))^{\prime}$, so the irreducible positive energy representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ stay irreducible and inequivalent when restricted to $L^{A} S U(N)$.

Vector primary fields. Let $P_{i}$ and $P_{j}$ be projections onto the irreducible summands $H_{i}$ and $H_{j}$ of $\pi_{P}^{\otimes \ell}$ and fix an $S U(N)$-equivariant embedding of $\mathbb{C}^{N}$ in $\mathbb{C}^{N} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{\ell}$. If $f \in L^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N}\right) \subset L^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{\ell}\right)$, we may "compress" the smeared fermion field $a(f)$ to get an operator $\phi_{i j}(f)=P_{i} a(f)$ $P_{j} \in \operatorname{Hom}\left(H_{j}, H_{i}\right)$. By construction $\phi_{i j}(f)$ satisfies a group covariance relation $g \phi(f) g^{-1}=\phi(g \cdot f)$ for $g \in L S U(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ as well as the $L^{2}$ bound $\|\phi(f)\| \leq\|f\|_{2}$. If $f$ is supported in $I^{c}$, then $\phi(f)$ gives a concrete element in $\operatorname{Hom}_{L_{I} S U(N)}\left(H_{j}, H_{i}\right)$; this space of intertwiners is known to be non-zero by local equivalence. Clearly $\phi$ defines a map $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N}\right) \otimes H_{j} \rightarrow H_{i}$ which intertwines the action of $\operatorname{LSU}(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$. The modes $\phi(v, n)=\phi\left(z^{-n} v\right)$
satisfy Lie algebra covariance relations $[D, \phi(v, n)]=-\phi(v, n), \quad[X(m)$, $\phi(v, n)]=\phi(X v, n+m)$. Exactly as in [39], the field $\phi$ is uniquely determined by these relations and its initial term $\phi(v, 0)$ in $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{j} \otimes V, V_{i}\right)$. Our main new result is that all vector primary fields arise by compressing fermions and therefore satisfy the $L^{2}$ bound above.

Braiding relations. If $f$ and $g$ have disjoint supports in $S^{1}$, then $a(f) a(g)=$ $-a(g) a(f)$ and $a(f) a(g)^{*}=-a(g)^{*} a(f)$. Similar but more complex "braiding relations" hold for vector primary fields and their adjoints. These may be summarised as follows. Let $a, b \in L^{2}\left(S^{1}, \mathbb{C}^{N}\right)$ be supported in intervals $I$ and $J$ in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$. Define $a_{g f}=\phi_{g f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha} a\right)$ and $b_{g f}=\phi_{g f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha} b\right)$, with $\alpha=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ and $e_{\alpha}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=e^{i \alpha \theta}$. Then

$$
b_{g f} a_{f h}=\sum \mu_{f_{1}} a_{g f_{1}} b_{f_{1} h}, \quad b_{g f} a_{g 1}^{*} f=\sum v_{h} a_{h g}^{*} b_{h g_{1}}
$$

with all coefficients non-zero. The proof of these relations is similar to that of the Bargmann-Hall-Wightman theorem [11, 20, 36]. To prove the first for example let $F_{k}(z)=\sum\left(\phi_{i k}(u, n) \phi_{k j}(v,-n) v_{j}, v_{i}\right) z^{n}$, a power series convergent for $|z|<1$ with values in $W=\operatorname{Hom}_{S U(N)}\left(V_{j} \otimes U \otimes V, V_{i}\right)$. To prove the braiding relation, it suffices to show that $F_{k}$ extends continuously to $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ and $F_{k}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=\sum c_{k h} e^{i \mu_{k h} \theta} F_{h}\left(e^{-i \theta}\right)$ there. Using Sugawara's formula for $D$, we show directly that the $F_{k}$ 's satisfy the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov ODE [23]

$$
\frac{d F}{d z}=\frac{P F}{z}+\frac{Q F}{1-z},
$$

where $P, Q \in \operatorname{End}(W)$ (the original proof in [23], referred to in [39], is different and less elementary). In all cases we need, the matrix $P$ has distinct eigenvalues, none of which differ by positive integers, and $Q$ is a non-zero multiple of a rank one idempotent in general position with respect to $P$. For two vector primary fields this ODE reduces to the classical hypergeometric ODE and the required relation on $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ follows from Gauss' formula for transporting solutions at 0 to $\infty$. In general the ODE can be related to the generalised hypergeometric ODE for which the corresponding transport relations were first obtained by Thomae [38] in 1867 in terms of products of gamma functions. Such a link exists because there is a basis of $W$ for which $P$ and $P-Q$ are both in rational canonical form. In this basis, the ODE is just the matrix form of the generalised hypergeometric ODE.

Transport formulas. The operator $a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}$ on $H_{0}$ commutes with $L_{I^{c}} S U(N)$, so lies in $\pi_{0}\left(L_{I} S U(N)\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Therefore, by local equivalence, we have the right to consider its image under $\pi_{f}$. We obtain the fundamental "transport formula": $\pi_{f}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f}$, with $\lambda_{g}>0$. Thus for $T \in \operatorname{Hom}_{L_{I} G}$ $\left(H_{0}, H_{f}\right)$, we have

$$
T a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}=\sum \lambda_{g} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f} T .
$$

We will prove the transport formula by induction using the braiding relations; the original proof in [43] used the transport relations between 0 and 1 of the basic ODE above.

Definition of Connes fusion. We develop the ideas of fusion directly at the level of loop groups without appeal to the general theory of bimodules over von Neumann algebras [9, 34, 42, 43]. Let $X, Y$ be positive energy representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ at level $\ell$. Let $\mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Hom}_{L_{c} S U(N)}\left(H_{0}, X\right)$ and $\mathscr{Y}=\operatorname{Hom}_{L_{I} S U(N)}\left(H_{0}, Y\right)$. These spaces of bounded intertwiners or fields replace vectors or states in $X$ and $Y$. Thus $x \in \mathscr{X}$ "creates" the state $x \Omega$ from the vacuum $\Omega$. The fusion $X \boxtimes Y$ is defined to be the completion of $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ with respect to the pre-inner product $\left\langle x_{1} \otimes y_{1}, x_{2} \otimes y_{2}\right\rangle=\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1} y_{2}^{*} y_{1} \Omega, \Omega\right)$, a four-point function. $X \boxtimes Y$ admits a natural action of $L_{I} S U(N) \times L_{I^{c}} S U(N)$. The map $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y} \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$ extends to continuous maps $X \otimes \mathscr{Y} \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$ and $\mathscr{X} \otimes Y \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$. This implies that if $\mathscr{X}_{0} \subset \mathscr{X}$ and $\overline{\mathscr{X}_{0} \boldsymbol{\Omega}}=X$, then $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ has dense image in $X \boxtimes Y$. Fusion is associative and $X \boxtimes H_{0}=X=H_{0} \boxtimes X$.

Explicit computation of fusion. We use the transport formula to prove the fusion rule $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}=\bigoplus H_{g}$ where $g$ ranges over permissible signatures obtained by adding a box to $f$. The transport formula is still true if $a_{g f}$ is replaced by linear combinations $x_{g f}$ of intertwiners $\pi_{g}(h) a_{g f}$ with $h \in L_{I} G$. But then for $y \in \operatorname{Hom}_{L_{I} S U(N)}\left(H_{0}, H_{f}\right)$ we have $\left(x^{*} x y^{*} y \Omega, \Omega\right)=\left(y^{*} \pi_{f}\left(x^{*} x\right)\right.$ $y \Omega, \Omega)=\sum \lambda_{g}\left\|x_{g f} y \Omega\right\|^{2}$. Thus $U(x \otimes y)=\oplus \lambda_{g}^{1 / 2} x_{g f} y \Omega$ gives the required unitary intertwiner from $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}$ onto $\bigoplus H_{g}$. Similar reasoning can be used to prove that $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{[k]} \leq \bigoplus_{g>f f} H_{g}$, where $g$ runs over all permissible signatures that can be obtained by adding $k$ boxes to $f$ with no two boxes in the same row. This time a transport formula must be proved with $a_{\square 0}$ replaced by a path $a_{k, k-1} a_{k-1, k-2} \cdots a_{\square 0}$ indexed by exterior powers. This device of considering products of vector primary fields means that we can avoid the use of smeared primary fields corresponding to the exterior powers $\lambda^{k} \mathbb{C}^{N}$ which need not be bounded [43].

The fusion ring. It follows immediately from the fusion rule with $H_{\square}$ that the $H_{f}$ 's are closed under fusion. Moreover, if $R$ denotes the operator corresponding to rotation by $180^{\circ}$, then the formula $B(x \otimes y)=R^{*}\left[R y R^{*} \otimes R x R^{*}\right]$ gives a unitary intertwining $X \boxtimes Y$ and $Y \boxtimes X$; this is a less refined form of the braiding operation that makes the level $\ell$ representations into a braided tensor category [44]. Thus the representation ring $\mathscr{R}$ of formal sums $\sum m_{f} H_{f}$ becomes a commutative ring. For each permitted signature $h$, let $z_{h} \in S U(N)$ be the diagonal matrix with entries $\exp \left(2 \pi i\left(h_{k}+N-k-H\right) /(N+\ell)\right)$ where $H=\left(\sum h_{k}+N-k\right) / N$; these give a subset $\mathscr{T}$. Let $\mathscr{S} \subset \mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$ be the image of $R(S U(N))$ under the map of restriction of characters. Our main result asserts that the natural $\mathbb{Z}$-module isomorphism ch $: \mathscr{R} \rightarrow \mathscr{S}$ defined by $\left[H_{f}\right] \mapsto\left[V_{f}\right]$ is a ring isomorphism. This completely determines the fusion rules. They agree with the well-known "Verlinde formulas" [40, 21], in which the usual tensor product rules for $S U(N)$ are modified by an action of the affine Weyl group.

Discussion. Many of the early versions of the results in Chapter II were worked out in discussions with Jones in 1989-1990 (see [19] and [42]). We were mainly interested in the inclusion $\pi_{i}\left(L_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \subseteq \pi_{i}\left(L_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}$ defined by the "failure of Haag duality". Algebraic quantum field theory [15] provided a series of predictions about these local loop group algebras which we interpreted (in the language of [30]) and verified. In particular two of the main theorems, Haag-Araki duality and loop group irreducibility, were originally obtained with Jones. In the case of geometric modular theory for fermions on $S^{1}$, each of us came up with different proofs which appear in simplified form here (see also [42]). The original proofs of irreducibility have been superseded by the simpler and more widely applicable method described above. One of our original proofs followed from the stronger result that $L^{A} G$ is dense in $L G$ in the natural topology on $U_{P}(H)$, so that $\pi\left(L^{A} G\right)$ is strong operator dense in $\pi(L G)$ for any positive energy representation; the analogous result fails for Diff $S^{1}$ and its discrete series representations. The geometric method of descent from local fermion algebras to local loop group algebras and its application to Haag duality and local equivalence were first suggested by me, but it was Jones who pointed out that this approach tacitly assumed Takesaki's result [37] ("Takesaki devissage").

The first paper of this series [42] is an expanded version of expository lectures given in the Borel seminar in Bern in 1994. Since it was intended as an introduction to the general theory, we included a complete treatment of the whole theory of fusion, braiding and subfactors for the important special case of $L S U(2)$. In the second paper of the series [43] we made a detailed study of primary fields from several points of view. (See Jones’ Séminaire Bourbaki talk [48] for a detailed summary.) We constructed all primary fields as compressions of tensor products of fermionic operators, thus establishing their analytic properties. To do so, we had to complete and extend the Lie algebraic approach of Tsuchiya and Kanie [39] and in particular prove the conjectured four-point property of physicists. Fusion of positive energy representations was computed using the braiding properties of primary fields. The braiding coefficients appeared as transport coefficients between different singular points of the basic ODE studied here; these coefficients were derived using Karamata's Tauberian theorem and a unitary trick. Since the smeared primary fields could be unbounded, their action had to be controlled by Sobolev norms; and a detailed argument had to be supplied for extending the braiding relations to arbitrary bounded intertwiners.

In this paper we give a more elementary approach to fusion using only vector primary fields and their adjoints. It is not possible to overemphasise the central rôle (prophesied by Connes) played by the fermionic model in our work, nor the importance of considering the relationships between different models (stressed by P. Goddard). The boundedness of the corresponding smeared fields is very significant. Not only does it simplify the analysis, but more importantly it can be seen to lie at the heart of the crucial irreducibility result (due to the duality between smeared primary fields and
loop group observables). This is an example of Goddard's philosophy that "vertex operators tell you what to do." With the important exception of the Lie algebra operators (indispensable for proving the KZ equation), we have tried to keep exclusively to bounded operators. This is in line with Rudolf Haag's philosophy that quantum field theory can and should be understood in terms of (algebras of) bounded operators [15]. Here, because of the boundedness of vector primary fields, there is no choice.

In the fourth paper of this series [44] we explain how the positive energy representations at a fixed level become a braided tensor category. We have already seen a simplified version of the braiding operation when proving that Connes fusion is commutative. The key to understanding this braiding structure lies in the "monodromy" action of the braid group on products of vector primary fields. The important feature of braiding allows us to make contact with the subfactors of the hyperfinite type $\mathrm{II}_{1}$ factor defined by Jones and Wenzl [18, 19, 45] using special traces on the infinite braid group. In particular this explains the coincidence between the monodromy representation of the braid group in [39] and the Hecke algebra representations of Jones and Wenzl. Further developments include understanding the "modularity" of the category, the property which allows 3-manifold invariants to be defined. This involves studying the elliptic KZ equations as well as finding and versifying precise versions of the axioms for a CFT; the ideas behind our computation of fusion seem to give a general method for understanding unitarity and positivity properties of quite general CFTs. In addition the analytic properties of primary fields implied by our construction (such as the fact that $q^{L_{0}} \phi(z)$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator for $|q|<1$ ) should allow primary fields to be interpreted as morphisms corresponding to 3-holed spheres or trinions in Segal's language. This should yield a precise analytic version of Segal's "modular functor", using the "operator formalism" for trinion decompositions of Riemann surfaces.

The braiding properties of vector primary fields can also be developed through a more systematic use of the conformal inclusion $\operatorname{SU}(N) \times$ $S U(\ell) \subset S U(N \ell)$. The level one representations and vector primary fields of $S U(N \ell)$, when restricted to $S U(N) \times S U(\ell)$ and decomposed into tensor products, yield all representations and vector primary fields of $S U(N)$ at level $\ell$ and $S U(\ell)$ at level $N$. The level one representations of $L S U(N \ell)$ arise by restricting the fermionic representation of $L U(N \ell)$ to $L S U(N \ell) \times L U(1)$ (here $U(1)$ is the centre of $U(N \ell)$ ). Our fermionic construction of primary fields for $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ in this and the previous paper have been a simplification of the more sophisticated picture provided by the above conformal inclusion, first considered from this point of view by Tsuchiya \& Nakanishi [27]. Here we have ignored the rôle of the group $S U(\ell)$. If it is brought into play, it is possible to give a less elementary but more conceptual non-computational proof that all the braiding coefficients are non-zero, based on the Abelian braiding of fermions or vector primary fields at level one. This approach, which will be taken up in detail when we consider subfactors defined by conformal inclusions, has the advantage firstly that it makes the
non-vanishing of the coefficients manifest and secondly that it does not require the explicit solutions of the KZ ODE and their monodromy properties that we have used here and in the second paper. It therefore extends to other groups where less information about the KZ ODE is available at present.


#### Abstract

Acknowledgements. I would like to thank various people for their help: Jurg Fröhlich for suggesting that positive energy representations might be studied from the point of view of algebraic quantum field theory; Alain Connes for signalling the importance of fermions and tensor products of bimodules in such a study; Klaus Fredenhagen for outlining the literature in algebraic quantum field theory; Sorin Popa for his results on type III subfactors; Peter Goddard for guiding me through the literature in conformal field theory; Richard Borcherds for logistic aid; Terence Loke for simplifying the proof of associativity of Connes fusion; Hans Wenzl for explaining his results on Hecke algebra fusion and subfactors; and Vaughan Jones for many helpful discussions and encouragement, particularly during the early collaborative stage of this research.


## I. Positive energy representations of $\mathbf{L S U}(\mathbf{N})$

## 2. Irreducible representations of $\operatorname{SU}(N)$

We give a brief account of the representation theory of $S U(N)$ from a point of view relevant to this paper. This account closely parallels our development of the classification and fusion of positive energy representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$, so provides a simple prototype. Let $V=\mathbb{C}^{N}$ be the vector representation. We shall consider irreducible representations of $\operatorname{SU}(N)$ appearing in tensor powers $V^{\otimes m}$. Let $R(S U(N))$ denote the representation ring of $S U(N)$, the ring of formal integer combinations of such irreducible representations. Let g be the Lie algebra of $\operatorname{SU}(N)$, the traceless skew-adjoint matrices. Thus g acts on $V^{\otimes m}$, hence each irreducible representation $W$, and $\operatorname{End}_{G}(W)=\operatorname{End}_{\mathrm{g}}(W)$. This representation of g extends linearly to a *-representation of its complexification $\mathrm{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$, the traceless matrices. $\mathrm{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$ is spanned by the elementary matrices $E_{i j}(i \neq j)$ and traceless diagonal matrices. Let $T$ denote the subgroup of diagonal matrices $z=\left(z_{1}, z_{2}, \ldots, z_{N}\right)$ in $S U(N)$. Given an irreducible representation $S U(N) \rightarrow U(W)$, we can write $W=\bigoplus_{g \in \mathbb{Z}^{N}} W_{g}$ with $\pi(z) v=z^{g} v$ for $v \in W_{g}, z \in T$. We call $g$ a weight and $W_{g}$ a weight space; $g$ is only determined up to addition of a vector $(a, a, \ldots, a)$ for $a \in \mathbb{Z}$. The monomial matrices in $S U(N)$ permute the weight spaces by permuting the entries of $g=\left(g_{1}, \ldots, g_{N}\right)$, so there is always a weight with $g_{1} \geq g_{2} \geq \ldots \geq g_{N}$. Such a weight is called a signature. If the weights are ordered lexicographically, the raising operators $\pi\left(E_{i j}\right)(i<j)$ carry weight spaces into weight spaces of higher weight; their adjoints $\pi\left(E_{i j}\right)(i>j)$ are called lowering operators and decrease weight.

Clearly every irreducible representation $W$ contains a highest weight vector $v$. Now $W$ is irreducible for $\mathrm{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$ and every monomial $A$ of operators in $\mathrm{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$ is a sum of products $L D R$ where $L$ is a product of lowering operators, $D$ is a product of diagonal operators and $R$ is a product of raising operators.

Since $L D R v$ is proportional to $v$ or has lower weight, $v$ is unique up to a multiple. On the other hand $\left(A_{1} v, A_{2} v\right)$ is uniquely determined by the weight of $v$ and the $A_{i}$ 's, since $A_{2}^{*} A_{1}$ can be written as a sum of operators $L D R$ and $(L D R v, v)=\left(D R v, L^{*} v\right)$ with $L^{*}$ a raising operator. Thus if $W^{\prime}$ is another irreducible representation with the same highest weight and corresponding vector $v^{\prime}, A v \mapsto A v^{\prime}$ is a unitary $W \rightarrow W^{\prime}$ intertwining g and hence $G=\exp (\mathrm{g})$. Thus irreducible representations are classified by their signatures. Every signature occurs: if $f_{1} \geq f_{2} \geq \cdots \geq f_{N} \geq 0$, the vector $e_{f}=$ $e_{1}^{\otimes\left(f_{1}-f_{2}\right)} \otimes\left(e_{1} \wedge e_{2}\right)^{\otimes\left(f_{2}-f_{3}\right)} \otimes \cdots \otimes\left(e_{1} \wedge e_{2} \wedge \cdots \wedge e_{N}\right)^{\otimes f_{N}}$ is the unique highest weight vector in $\lambda^{1} V^{\otimes\left(f_{1}-f_{2}\right)} \otimes \lambda^{2} V^{\otimes\left(f_{2}-f_{3}\right)} \otimes \cdots \otimes \lambda^{N} V^{\otimes f_{N}} \subseteq V^{\otimes}\left(\sum f_{i}\right)$. By uniqueness, $e_{f}$ generates an irreducible submodule.

A signature $f$ with $f_{N} \geq 0$ is represented by a Young diagram with at most $N$ rows and $f_{i}$ boxes in the $i$ th row. Thus $V$ corresponds to the diagram $\square$ and $\lambda^{k} V$ to the diagram $[k]$ with $k$ rows, with one box in each row. We write $g>f$ if $g$ can be obtained by adding one box to $f$. More generally we write $g>_{k} f$ if $g$ can be obtained by adding $k$ boxes to $f$ with no two in the same row.

Lemma. $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}, V_{g}\right)$ is at most one-dimensional and only non-zero if $g>_{k} f$. When $k=1$, it is non-zero iff $g>f$. Hence $V_{f} \otimes V_{\square}=\bigoplus_{g>f} V_{g}$ and $V_{f} \otimes \lambda^{k} V \leq \bigoplus_{g>h f} V_{g}$.

Proof. Let $v_{f}$ and $v_{g}$ be highest weight vectors in $V_{f}$ and $V_{g}$. If $T \in \operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}, V_{g}\right)$ with $T\left(v_{f} \otimes v\right)=0$ for all $v \in \lambda^{k} V$, then applying lowering operators we see that $T=0$. If $T \neq 0$, we take $w=e_{i_{1}} \wedge \ldots \wedge e_{i_{k}}$ of highest weight such that $T\left(v_{f} \otimes w\right) \neq 0$. Applying raising operators, we see that $T\left(v_{f} \otimes w\right)$ is highest weight in $V_{g}$ so is proportional to $v_{g}$. So the weight of $v_{f} \otimes w$ is a signature and $g>_{k} f$. If $S$ is another non-zero intertwiner, we may choose $\alpha$ such that $R=S-\alpha T$ satisfies $R\left(v_{f} \otimes w\right)=0$. If $R \neq 0$, we may choose $w^{\prime}$ of highest weight such that $R\left(v_{f} \otimes w\right) \neq 0$. But this gives a contradiction, since $R\left(v_{f} \otimes w\right)$ would be annihilated by all raising operators and have weight lower than $v_{g}$. So $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}, V_{g}\right)$ is at most one-dimensional.

If $g$ is obtained by adding a box to the $i$ th row of $f$, then the map

$$
\begin{aligned}
T: & \lambda^{1} V^{\otimes\left(f_{1}-f_{2}\right)} \otimes \lambda^{2} V^{\otimes\left(f_{2}-f_{3}\right)} \otimes \cdots \otimes \lambda^{N} V^{\otimes f_{N}} \otimes V \\
& \rightarrow \lambda^{1} V^{\otimes\left(g_{1}-g_{2}\right)} \otimes \lambda^{2} V^{\otimes\left(g_{2}-g_{3}\right)} \otimes \cdots \otimes \lambda^{N} V^{\otimes g_{N}}
\end{aligned}
$$

given by exterior multiplication by $V$ on the $\left(f_{1}-f_{i}\right)$ th copy of $\Lambda V$ commutes with $G$ and satisfies $T\left(e_{f} \otimes e_{i}\right)=e_{g}$. Thus if $P$ and $Q$ denote the projections onto the submodules generated by $e_{f}$ and $e_{g}$ respectively, $Q T(P \otimes I)$ gives a non-zero intertwiner $V_{f} \otimes V \rightarrow V_{g}$.

For $z_{i} \in \mathbb{C}$ and a signature $f$, we define the symmetric function $X_{f}(z)=\operatorname{det}\left(z_{j}^{f_{i}+n-i}\right) / \operatorname{det}\left(z_{j}^{n-i}\right)$. The denominator here is a Vandermonde determinant given by $\prod_{i<j}\left(z_{i}-z_{j}\right)$. If $X_{k}(z)=\sum_{i_{1}<\cdots i_{k}} z_{i_{1}} \ldots z_{i_{k}}$, then it is elementary to show that $X_{f} X_{k}=\sum_{g>k} X_{g}$ for $k=1, \ldots, N$. In particular
$X_{k}(z)$ coincides with $X_{[k]}(z)$; and it follows, by induction on $f_{1}-f_{N}$ and the number of boxes in the $f_{1}$ th column, that each $X_{f}(z)$ is an integral polynomial in the $X_{k}(z)$ 's.

Theorem. (1) $V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g>{ }_{h} f} V_{g}$.
(2) $R(S U(N))$ is generated by the exterior powers and the map ch : $\left[V_{f}\right] \rightarrow$ $X_{f}$ gives a ring isomorphism between $R(S U(N))$ and $\mathscr{S}_{N}$, the ring of symmetric integral polynomials in $z$, where $\prod z_{i}=1$.
(3) (Weyl's character formula [44]) $\chi_{f}(z) \equiv \operatorname{Tr}\left(\pi_{f}(z)\right)=X_{f}(z)$ for all $f$.

Proof. (1) We know that $V_{f} \otimes \lambda^{k} V \leq \bigoplus_{g>_{k} f} V_{g}$. We prove by induction on $|f|=\sum f_{j}$ that $V_{f} \otimes V_{k}=\bigoplus_{g_{1}>k f} V_{g_{1}}$. It suffices to show that if this holds for $f$ then it holds for all $g$ with $g>f$. Now, comparing the coefficients of $X_{h}$ in $\left(X_{f} X_{k}\right) X_{\square}=\left(X_{f} X_{\square}\right) X_{k}$, we see that $\left|\left\{g_{1}: h>_{k} g_{1}>f\right\}\right|=\mid\left\{g_{2}: h>g_{2}\right.$ $\left.>_{k} f\right\} \mid$. Tensoring by $V_{\square}$, we deduce that $\oplus_{g>f} V_{g} \otimes V_{[k]}=\oplus_{g_{1}>k f} \oplus_{h>g_{1}} V_{h}=$ $\oplus_{g>f} \oplus_{h>_{k} g} V_{h}$. Since $V_{g} \otimes V_{[k]} \leq \bigoplus_{h>k} V_{h}$, we must have equality for all $g$, completing the induction.
(2) Let ch be the $\mathbb{Z}$-linear isomorphism ch : $R(S U(N)) \rightarrow \mathscr{S}_{N}$ extending $\operatorname{ch}\left(V_{f}\right)=X_{f}$. Then by $(1), \operatorname{ch}\left(V_{[k]} V_{f}\right)=X_{k} X_{f}$. This implies that ch restricts to a ring homomorphism on the subring of $R(S U(N))$ generated by the exterior powers. On the other hand the $X_{k}$ 's generate $\mathscr{S}_{N}$, so the image of this subring is the whole of $\mathscr{S}_{N}$. Since ch is injective, the ring generated by the exterior powers must be the whole of $R(S U(N))$ and ch is thus a ring homomorphism, as required.
(3) The maps $\left[V_{f}\right] \rightarrow \chi_{f}(z)$ and $\left[V_{f}\right] \mapsto X_{f}(z)$ define ring homomorphisms $R(S U(N)) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$. These coincide on the exterior powers and therefore everywhere.

## 3. Fermions and quantisation

Given a complex Hilbert space $H$, the complex Clifford algebra $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$ is the unital *-algebra generated by a complex linear map $f \mapsto a(f)(f \in H)$ satisfying the anticommutation relations $a(f) a(g)+a(g) a(f)=0$ and $a(f) a(g)^{*}+a(g)^{*} a(f)=(f, g)$ (complex Clifford algebra relations). The Clifford algebra has a natural action $\pi$ on $\Lambda H$ (fermionic Fock space) given by $\pi(a(f)) \omega=f \wedge \omega$, called the complex wave representation. The complex wave representation is irreducible. For $\Omega$ is the unique vector such that $a(f)^{*} \Omega=0$ for all $f$ (this condition is equivalent to orthogonality to $\left.\sum_{k \geq 1} \lambda^{k} H\right)$ and $\Omega$ is cyclic for the $a(f)$ 's. Thus if $T \in \operatorname{End}(\Lambda H)$ commutes with all $a(f)^{*}$ 's, $T \Omega=\lambda \Omega$ for $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$; and if $T$ also commutes with all $a(f)$ 's, $T=\lambda I$.

To produce other irreducible representations of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$, we introduce the operators $c(f)=a(f)+a(f)^{*}$. Thus $c$ satisfies $c(f)=c(f)^{*}, f \mapsto c(f)$ is real-linear and $c(f) c(g)+c(g) c(f)=2 \operatorname{Re}(f, g)$ (real Clifford algebra relations). The equations $c(f)=a(f)+a(f)^{*}$ and $a(f)=(c(f)-i c(i f)) / 2$
give a correspondence between complex and real Clifford algebra relations. Since $c$ relies only on the underlying real Hilbert space $H_{\mathbb{R}}$, complex structures on $H_{\mathbb{R}}$ commuting with $i$ give new irreducible representations of Cliff $(H)$. These complex structures correspond to projections $P$ in $H$ : multiplication by $i$ is given by $i$ on $P H$ and $-i$ on $(P H)^{\perp}$. Unravelling this definition, we find that the projection $P$ defines an irreducible representation $\pi_{P}$ of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$ on fermionic Fock space $\mathscr{F}_{P}=\Lambda P H \widehat{\otimes} \Lambda\left(P^{\perp} H\right)^{*}$ given by $\pi_{P}(a(f))=a(P f)+a\left(\left(P^{\perp} f\right)^{*}\right)^{*}$. (Equivalently $\pi_{p}(a(f))=(c(f)-i c$ $(i(2 P-I) f)) / 2$ on $\Lambda H$.)

Theorem (Segal's equivalence criterion [3]). Two irreducible representations $\pi_{P}$ and $\pi_{Q}$ are unitarily equivalent if $P-Q$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator.

Remark. The converse also holds [3, 42], but will not be needed.
Proof. If $P H$ ( or $P^{\perp} H$ ) is finite-dimensional, then so is $Q H$ (or $Q^{\perp} H$ ) and the representations are easily seen to be equivalent to the irreducible representation on $\Lambda H$ (or $\Lambda H^{*}$ ). So we may assume that $\operatorname{dim} P H=\operatorname{dim} P^{\perp} H=\infty$.

The operator $T=(P-Q)^{2}$ is compact, so by the spectral theorem $H=\bigoplus_{\lambda \geq 0} H_{\lambda}$ where $T \xi=\lambda \xi$ for $\xi \in H_{\lambda}$. Moreover $\operatorname{dim} H_{\lambda}<\infty$ for $\lambda>0$ while $P=Q$ on $H_{0}$. Now $T$ commutes with $P$ and $Q$, so that each $H_{\lambda}$ is invariant under $P$ and $Q$. Thus $H$ can be written as a direct sum of finitedimensional irreducible submodules $V_{i}$ for $P$ and $Q$, with $(P-Q)^{2}$ a scalar $\lambda$ on each. Since the images of $P$ and $Q$ (and $I$ ) should generate $\operatorname{End}\left(V_{i}\right)$, the identity $(P-Q)^{2}=\lambda I$ forces $\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{End}\left(V_{i}\right) \leq 4$. Hence $\operatorname{dim} V_{i}=1$ or 2.

Pick an orthonormal basis $\left(e_{i}\right)_{i \geq-a}$ of $P^{\perp} H$ with each $e_{i}$ lying in some $V_{j}$. We may assume that $Q^{\perp} e_{-1}=Q^{\perp} e_{-2}=\cdots=Q^{\perp} e_{-a}=0$ and that $Q^{\perp} e_{i} \neq 0$ for $i \geq 0$. Complete $\left(e_{i}\right)$ to an orthonormal basis $\left(e_{i}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}$ by adding remaining vectors from the $V_{j}$ 's. We can also choose an orthonormal basis $\left(f_{j}\right)_{j \geq-b}$ of $Q^{\perp} H$ with $f_{i}$ lying in the same $V_{j}$ as $e_{i}$ if $i \geq 0$; we shall even pick $f_{i}$ so that $\left(e_{i}, f_{i}\right)>0$ in this case. A simple computation shows that if $(P-Q)^{2}=\lambda_{i} I$ on $V_{j}$, then $\left(e_{i}, f_{i}\right)=\sqrt{1-\lambda_{i}}$ (so $\lambda_{i}=0$ when $\operatorname{dim} V_{j}=1$ ). Note that, using these bases, we get $\|P-Q\|_{2}^{2}=\operatorname{Tr}(P-Q)^{2}=a+b+2 \sum \lambda_{i}$, so that $\sum \lambda_{i}<\infty$.

The "Dirac sea" model $\mathscr{H}$ for $\Lambda H_{P}$ is the Hilbert space with orthonormal basis given by all symbols $e_{i_{1}} \wedge e_{i_{2}} \wedge e_{i_{3}} \wedge \cdots$ where $i_{1}<i_{2}<i_{3}<\cdots$ and $i_{k+1}=i_{k}+1$ for $k$ sufficiently large. If $A\left(e_{i}\right)$ denotes exterior multiplication by $e_{i}$, then $A\left(e_{i}\right) A\left(e_{j}\right)+A\left(e_{j}\right) A\left(e_{i}\right)=0$ and $A\left(e_{i}\right) A\left(e_{j}\right)^{*}+A\left(e_{j}\right)^{*} A\left(e_{i}\right)=\delta_{i j} I$. By linearity and continuity, these extend to operators $A(f)(f \in H)$ satisfying the complex Clifford algebra relations so give a representation $\pi$ of Cliff $(H)$. Let $\xi=e_{-a} \wedge e_{-a+1} \wedge \cdots$. Then the $A(f)$ and $A(f)^{*}$ s act cyclically on $\xi$ and $\left(A\left(f_{1}\right) \ldots A\left(f_{m}\right) \xi, A\left(g_{1}\right) \cdots A\left(g_{n}\right) \xi\right)=\delta_{m n} \operatorname{det}\left(P f_{i}, g_{j}\right)$. On the other hand $\left(\pi_{P}\left(a\left(f_{1}\right)\right) \ldots \pi_{P}\left(a\left(f_{m}\right)\right) \Omega_{P}, \pi_{P}\left(a\left(g_{1}\right)\right) \ldots \pi_{P}\left(a\left(g_{n}\right)\right) \Omega_{P}\right)=\delta_{m n}$ $\operatorname{det}\left(P f_{i}, g_{j}\right)$, where $\Omega_{P}$ is the vacuum vector in $\Lambda H_{P}$. Thus $(\pi(a) \xi, \xi)=$ $\left(\pi_{P}(a) \Omega_{P}, \Omega_{P}\right)$ for $a \in \operatorname{Cliff}(H)$. Replacing $a$ by $a^{*} a$ and recalling that $\xi$ and $\Omega_{P}$ are cyclic, we see that $U\left(\pi_{P}(a) \Omega_{P}\right)=\pi(a) \xi$ defines a unitary from $\Lambda H_{P}$ onto $\mathscr{H}$ such that $\pi(a)=U \pi_{P}(a) U^{*}$. The same "Gelfand-Naimark-Segal"
argument shows that unitary equivalence of $\pi_{P}$ and $\pi_{Q}$ will follow as soon as we find $\eta \in \mathscr{H}$ such that $(\pi(a) \eta, \eta)=\left(\pi_{Q}(a) \Omega_{Q}, \Omega_{Q}\right)$. (Note that $\eta$ is automatically cyclic, since $\mathscr{H} \cong \Lambda H_{P}$ is irreducible.)

Let $\eta_{N}=f_{-b} \wedge \cdots \wedge f_{-1} \wedge f_{0} \wedge \cdots \wedge f_{N} \wedge e_{N+1} \wedge e_{N+2} \wedge \cdots$. Clearly if $a$ lies in the ${ }^{*}$-algebra generated by the $a\left(e_{i}\right)$ 's, then $\left(\pi(a) \eta_{N}, \eta_{N}\right)=$ $\left(\pi_{Q}(a) \Omega_{Q}, \Omega_{Q}\right)$ for $N$ sufficiently large. Thus it will suffice to show that $\eta_{N}$ has a limit $\eta$, i.e. $\left(\eta_{N}\right)$ is a Cauchy sequence. Since $\left\|\eta_{N}\right\|=1$, this follows if $\operatorname{Re}\left(\eta_{M}, \eta_{N}\right) \rightarrow 1$ as $M \leq N \rightarrow \infty$. But $\left(\eta_{M}, \eta_{N}\right)=\prod_{i=M+1}^{N}\left(e_{i}, f_{i}\right)=\prod_{i=M+1}^{N}$ $\sqrt{1-\lambda_{i}}$ and, as $\sum \lambda_{i}<\infty$, this tends to 1 if $M, N \rightarrow \infty$, as required.

Corollary of proof. If $\pi_{P}$ and $\pi_{Q}$ are unitarily equivalent and $\Omega_{Q}$ is the image of the vacuum vector in $\mathscr{F}_{Q}$ in $\mathscr{F}_{Q}$, then $\left|\left(\Omega_{P}, \Omega_{Q}\right)\right|^{2}=\Pi\left(1-\mu_{i}\right)$ where $\mu_{i}$ are the eigenvalues of $(P-Q)^{2}$.

Proof. We have $\left|\left(\Omega_{P}, \Omega_{Q}\right)\right|=|(\xi, \eta)|=\lim \left|\left(\xi, \eta_{N}\right)\right|=\prod\left(1-\mu_{i}\right)^{1 / 2}$.
Any $u \in U(H)$ gives rise to a Bogoliubov automorphism of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$ via $a(f) \mapsto a(u f)$. This automorphism is said to be implemented in $\pi_{P}$ (or on $\left.\mathscr{F}_{P}\right)$ if $\pi_{P}(a(u f))=U \pi_{P}(a(f)) U^{*}$ for some unitary $U \in U\left(\mathscr{F}_{P}\right)$ unique up to a phase. Since $\pi_{P}(a(u f))=\pi_{Q}(a(f))$ with $Q=u^{*} P u$, we immediately deduce:

Corollary (Segal's quantisation criterion [3, 30,42]). $u$ is implemented in $\mathscr{F}_{P}$ if $[u, P]$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator.

We define the restricted unitary group $U_{P}(H)=\{u \in U(H):[u, P]$ Hilbert - Schmidt $\}$, a topological group under the strong operator topology combined with the metric $d(u, v)=\|[u-v, P]\|_{2}$. By the corollary, there is a homomorphism $\pi$ of $U_{P}(H)$ into $P U\left(\mathscr{F}_{P}\right)$, called the basic projective representation.

Lemma. The basic representation is continuous.
Proof. It is enough to show continuity at the identity. Thus if $u_{n} \xrightarrow{s} I$ and $\left\|\left[u_{n}, P\right]\right\|_{2} \rightarrow 0$, we must find a lift $U_{n} \in U\left(\mathscr{F}_{P}\right)$ of $\pi\left(u_{n}\right)$ such that $U_{n} \xrightarrow{s} I$. Now $\left\|\left[u_{n}, P\right]\right\|_{2}=\left\|P-Q_{n}\right\|_{2}$ where $Q_{n}=u_{n}^{*} P u_{n}$. So $\operatorname{Tr}\left(P-Q_{n}\right)^{2} \rightarrow 0$. On the other hand $\left|\left(\Omega_{P}, \Omega_{Q_{n}}\right)\right|^{2}=\prod\left(1-\mu_{i}\right)$ where $\mu_{i}$ are the (non-zero) eigenvalues of $\left(P-Q_{n}\right)^{2}$. Since $\operatorname{Tr}\left(P-Q_{n}\right)^{2}=\sum \mu_{i}$ and $\Pi\left(1-\mu_{i}\right) \geq \exp \left(-2 \sum \mu_{i}\right)$ for $\sum \mu_{i}$ small, it follows that $\left|\left(\Omega_{P}, \Omega_{Q_{n}}\right)\right| \rightarrow 1$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. If $u_{n}$ is implemented by $U_{n}$ in $\mathscr{F}_{P}$, then $U_{n} \Omega_{P}$ and $\Omega_{Q_{n}}$ are equal up to a phase. So $\left|\left(U_{n} \Omega_{P}, \Omega_{P}\right)\right| \rightarrow 1$. Adjusting $U_{n}$ by a phase, we may assume $\left(U_{n} \Omega_{P}, \Omega_{P}\right)>0$ eventually so that $U_{n} \Omega_{P} \rightarrow \Omega_{P}$. Now, taking operator norms, $\left\|U_{n} \pi(a(f)) U_{n}^{*}-\pi(a(f))\right\|=$ $\left\|\pi\left(a\left(u_{n} f-f\right)\right)\right\| \leq\left\|u_{n} f-f\right\|$. It follows that $\left\|U_{n} a U_{n}^{*}-a\right\| \rightarrow 0$ for any $a \in \pi_{P}(\operatorname{Cliff} H)$. Thus $U_{n} a \Omega_{P}=\left(U_{n} a U_{n}^{*}\right)_{s}\left(U_{n} \Omega_{P}\right) \rightarrow a \Omega_{P}$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Since vectors $a \Omega_{P}$ are dense in $\mathscr{F}_{P}$, we get $U_{n} \xrightarrow{s} I$, as required.

Note that if $[u, P]=0$, so that $u$ commutes with $P$, then $u$ is canonically implemented in Fock space $\mathscr{F}_{P}$ and we may refer to the canonical
quantisation of $u$. If on the contrary $u P u^{*}=I-P$, then $u$ is canonically implemented by a conjugate-linear isometry in Fock space, also called the canonical quantisation of $u$. Thus the canonical quantisations correspond to unitaries that are complex-linear or conjugate-linear for the complex structure defined by $P$.

## 4. The fundamental representation

Let $G=S U(N)$ (or $U(N)$ ) and define the loop group $L G=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, G\right)$, the smooth maps of the circle into $G$. Let $H=L^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V\left(V=\mathbb{C}^{N}\right)$ and let $P$ be the projection onto the Hardy space $H^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$ of functions with vanishing negative Fourier coefficients (or equivalently boundary values of functions holomorphic in the unit disc). Now $L G$ acts unitarily by multiplication on $H$. In fact if $f \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}\right.$, End $\left.V\right)$ and $m(f)$ is the corresponding multiplication operator, then it is easy to check, using the Fourier coefficients of $f$, that $\|[P, m(f)]\|_{2} \leq\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{2}$. In particular $L G$ satisfies Segal's quantisation criterion for $P$ and we therefore get a projective representation of $L U(N)$ on $\mathscr{F}_{P}$ [30, 42], continuous for the $C^{\infty}$ topology on $L U(N) \subset C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}\right.$, End $\left.V\right)$. The rotation group Rot $S^{1}$ acts by automorphisms on $L G$ by $\left(r_{\alpha} f\right)(\theta)=f(\theta+\alpha)$. The same formula defines a unitary action on $L^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$ which leaves $H^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$ invariant. Therefore this action of $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ is canonically quantised and we thus get a projective representation of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ on $\mathscr{F}_{P}$ which restricts to an ordinary representation on $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Let

$$
S U_{ \pm}(1,1)=\left\{\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\alpha & \beta \\
\bar{\beta} & \bar{\alpha}
\end{array}\right):|\alpha|^{2}-|\beta|^{2}= \pm 1\right\}
$$

and let $S U_{+}(1,1)=S U(1,1)$ and $S U_{-}(1,1)$ denote the elements with determinant +1 or -1 . Thus $S U_{-}(1,1)$ is a coset of $S U_{+}(1,1)$ with representative $F=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & -1 \\ -1 & 0\end{array}\right)$, for example. The matrices $g \in S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ act by fractional linear transformations on $S^{1}, g(z)=(\alpha z+\beta) /(\bar{\beta} z+\bar{\alpha})$. This leads to a unitary action on $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ via $\left(V_{g} \cdot f\right)(z)=(\alpha-\bar{\beta} z)^{-1} f\left(g^{-1}(z)\right)$. Since $(\alpha-\bar{\beta} z)^{-1}$ is holomorphic for $|z|<1$ and $|\alpha|>|\beta|$, it follows that $V_{g}$ commutes with the Hardy space projection $P$ for $g \in S U_{+}(1,1)$. The matrix $F$ acts on $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ via $(F \cdot f)(z)=z^{-1} f\left(z^{-1}\right)$ and clearly satisfies $F P F=I-P$. It follows that $F$ is canonically implemented in fermionic Fock space $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ by a conjugate-linear isometry fixing the vacuum vector. Since $S U_{-}(1,1)=S U_{+}(1,1) F$, the same holds for each $g \in S U_{-}(1,1)$. Thus we get an orthogonal representation of $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ for the underlying real inner product on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ with $S U_{+}(1,1)$ preserving the complex structure and $S U_{-}(1,1)$ reversing it. The same is true in $\mathscr{F}_{V}^{\otimes \ell}$.

Let $U_{z}$ denote the canonically quantised action of the gauge group $U(1)$ on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$, corresponding to multiplication by $z$ on $H$. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-grading on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ is given by the operator $U=U_{-I}$.

Lemma. $\pi(g) U_{z} \pi(g)^{*}=U_{z}$ for all $g \in L S U(N)$ and $z \in U(1)$.
Proof. The group $S U(N)$ is simply connected, so the group $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ is connected (any path can be smoothly contracted to a constant path and $S U(N)$ is connected). The map $U(H) \times U(H) \rightarrow U(H),(u, v) \mapsto u v u^{*} v^{*}$ is continuous and descends to $P U(H) \times P U(H)$. So $(u, v) \mapsto u v u^{*} v^{*}$ defines a continuous map $P U(H) \times P U(H) \rightarrow U(H)$. Since $g$ and $z$ commute on the prequantised space $H, \pi(g)$ and $U_{z}$ commute in $P U(H)$. Hence $\pi(g) U_{z} \pi(g)^{*} U_{z}^{*}=$ $\lambda(g, z)$ where $\lambda(g, z) \in \mathbb{T}$ depends continuous on $g$ and $z$. Writing this equation as $\pi(g) U_{z} \pi(g)^{*}=\lambda(g, z) U_{z}$, we see that $\lambda(g, \cdot)$ defines a character $\lambda_{g}$ of $U(1)$. Clearly $\lambda_{g} \lambda_{h}=\lambda_{g h}$, so we get a continuous homomorphism of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ into $\widehat{U(1)}$, the group of characters of $U(1)$. Since $\widehat{U(1)}=\mathbb{Z}$ and $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ is connected, $\lambda_{g}=1$ for all $g$. So $\lambda(g, z)=1$ for all $g, z$ as required.

Corollary. Each operator $\pi(g)$ with $g \in \operatorname{LSU}(N)$ is even (it commutes with $U=U_{-1}$ ).

## 5. The central extension $\mathscr{L} G$

We introduce the central extension of $L G$

$$
1 \rightarrow \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathscr{L} G \rightarrow L G \rightarrow 1
$$

obtained by pulling back the central extension $1 \rightarrow \mathbb{T} \rightarrow U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right) \rightarrow$ $P U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right) \rightarrow 1$ under the map $\pi: L G \rightarrow P U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$. In other words it is the closed subgroup of $L G \times U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$ given by $\{(g, u): \pi(g)=[u]\}$ : it contains $\mathbb{T}=1 \times \mathbb{T}$ as a central subgroup and has quotient $L G$. By definition $\mathscr{L} G$ has a unique unitary representation $\pi$ on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ given by $\pi(g, u)=u$. This extension is compatible with the action of $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ and $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Lemma. If $\pi(\gamma)$ denotes the canonical quantisation of $\gamma \in S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ on fermionic Fock space $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ and $\mathscr{L} G=\{(g, u): \pi(g)=[u]\}$, then the operators $(\gamma, \pi(\gamma))$ normalise $\pi(\mathscr{L} G)$ acting on the centre $\mathbb{T}$ as the identity if $\gamma \in S U_{+}(1,1)$ and as complex conjugation if $\gamma \in S U_{-}(1,1)$.

Proof. This follows because $\pi(\gamma) \pi(g) \pi(\gamma)^{-1}$ has the same image as $\pi\left(g \cdot \gamma^{-1}\right)$ in $P U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$.

## 6. Positive energy representations

We may consider the decomposition of $\mathscr{F}_{P}=\Lambda(P H) \otimes \Lambda\left(P^{\perp} H\right)^{*}$ into weight spaces of Rot $S^{1}=\mathbb{T}$, writing $\mathscr{F}_{P}=\bigoplus_{n \geq 0} \mathscr{F}_{P}(n)$, where $z \in \mathbb{T}$ acts on $\mathscr{F}_{P}(n)$ as multiplication by $z^{n}$. Since Rot $S^{1}$ acts with finite multiplicity and only non-negative weight spaces on $P H$ and $\left(P^{\perp} H\right)^{*}$, it is easy to see that $\mathscr{F}_{P}(n)$ is finite-dimensional for $n \geq 0$ and $\mathscr{F}_{P}(n)=(0)$ for $n<0$. Moreover
$\mathscr{F}_{P}(0)=\Lambda(V)$. We define a representation of $\mathbb{T}$ on $H$ to have positive energy if in the decomposition $H=\bigoplus H(n)$ we have $H(n)=0$ for $n<0$ and $H(n)$ finite-dimensional for $n \geq 0$. (Usually we will also insist on the normalisation $H(0) \neq(0)$, which can always be achieved through tensoring by a character of $\mathbb{T}$.) Thus Rot $S^{1}$ acts on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ with positive energy.

Proposition. Suppose that $\Gamma$ is a subgroup of $U(H)$ and that $\mathbb{T}$ acts on $H$ with positive energy normalising $\Gamma$. Let $U_{t}$ be the action (with $t \in[0,2 \pi]$ ).
(a) If $H$ is irreducible as an $\Gamma \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-module, then it is irreducible as a $\Gamma$ module.
(b) If $H_{1}$ and $H_{2}$ are irreducible $\Gamma \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-modules which are isomorphic as $\Gamma$ modules, then one is obtained from the other by tensoring with a character of $\mathbb{T}$.
(c) If $H$ is the cyclic $\Gamma$-module generated by a lowest energy vector, it contains an irreducible $\Gamma \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-module generated by some lowest energy vector.
(d) Any positive energy representation is a direct sum of irreducibles.

Proof. (a) Let $M=\Gamma^{\prime}$, the commutant of $\Gamma$, so that $M=\{T: T g=g T$ for all $g \in \Gamma\}$. By Schur's lemma, $M \cap\left\langle U_{t}\right\rangle^{\prime}=\mathbb{C} I$ since $\Gamma$ and $\mathbb{T}$ act irreducibly. Note that $U_{t}$ normalises $M$, since it normalises $\Gamma$. Let $v$ be a lowest energy vector in $H . v$ is cyclic for $\Gamma$ and $\mathbb{T}$ and hence $\Gamma$, so $a v \neq 0$ for $a \neq 0$ in $M$. If $M \neq \mathbb{C}$, there is a non-scalar self-adjoint element $T \in M$. Define $T_{n} \in B(H) \quad$ by $\quad\left(T_{n} \xi, \eta\right)=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} e^{-i n t}\left(U_{t} T_{n} U_{t}^{*} \xi, \eta\right) d t$. Then $\quad T_{n} \in M$, $U_{t} T U_{t}^{*}=e^{i n t} T_{n}, T_{n}^{*}=T_{-n}$ and $T v=\oplus T_{n} v$. By assumption $T_{0}$ must be a scalar. Since $T \notin \mathbb{C} I, T v$ cannot be a multiple of $v$ and therefore $T_{n} \neq 0$ for some $n \neq 0$. Since $T_{n}^{*}=T_{-n}$, we may assume $n<0$. But then $T_{n} v \neq 0$ gives a vector of lower energy than $v$. So $M=\mathbb{C}$ and $\Gamma$ acts irreducibly.
(b) Let $T: H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}$ be a unitary intertwiner for $\Gamma$. Then $V_{t}^{*} T U_{t}$ is also a unitary intertwiner, so must be of the form $\lambda(t) T$ for $\lambda(t) \in \mathbb{T}$ by Schur's lemma. Since $T U_{t} T^{*}=\lambda(t) V_{t}, \lambda(t)$ must be a character of $\mathbb{T}$.
(c) Let $V$ be the subspace of lowest energy. Let $K$ be any $\Gamma \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-invariant subspace of $H$ with corresponding projection $p \in \Gamma^{\prime}$. Since $H=\overline{\operatorname{lin}}(\Gamma V)$, $K=p H=\overline{\operatorname{lin}}(\Gamma p V)$. But $p V \subseteq V$, since $p$ commutes with $\mathbb{T}$. Choosing $p V$ in $V$ of smallest dimension, we see that $K=\varnothing \overline{\operatorname{lin}}(\Gamma p V)$ must be irreducible as a $\Gamma \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-module and hence as a $\Gamma$-module. Thus $H$ contains an irreducible submodule $K$ generated by any non-zero $p v$ with $v \in V$.
(d) Take the cyclic module generated by a vector of lowest energy. This contains an irreducible submodule generated by another vector of lowest energy $H_{1}$ say. Now repeat this process for $H_{1}^{\perp}$, to get $H_{2}, H_{3}$, etc. The positive energy assumption shows that $H=\bigoplus H_{i}$.

Corollary. If $\pi: L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1} \rightarrow P U(H)$ is a projective representation which restricts to an ordinary positive energy representation of $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$, then $H$ decomposes as a direct sum $\bigoplus H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$ where the $H_{i}$ 's are representations of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ irreducible on $L G$ with $H_{i}(0) \neq(0)$ and the multiplicity spaces are positive energy representations of $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

We apply this result to the positive energy representation $\underset{P}{\mathscr{F}_{P}^{\otimes \ell}}$ of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$. The irreducible summands of $\mathscr{F}_{P}^{\otimes \ell}$ are called the level $\ell$ irreducible representations of $L G$. By definition any positive energy representation extends to $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$. More generally the vacuum representation at level $\ell$ extends (canonically) to $L G \rtimes S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$. In fact, since $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ fixes the vacuum vector and this generates the vacuum representation at level $\ell$ as an $L G$-module, it follows that the vacuum representation at level $\ell$ admits a compatible orthogonal representation of $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$, unitary on $S U_{+}(1,1)$ and antiunitary on $S U_{-}(1,1)$. We also need the less obvious fact that $S U(1,1)$ is implemented by a projective unitary representation in any level $\ell$ representation; this follows from a global form of the Goddard-Kent-Olive construction [12].

Lemma (coset construction). Let $H=\bigoplus H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$ and let $M=\bigoplus B\left(H_{i}\right) \otimes I$. Let $\pi: \mathscr{G} \rightarrow P U(H)$ be a projective unitary representation of the connected topological group $\mathscr{G}$ such that $\pi(g) M \pi(g)^{*}=M$ for all $g \in \mathscr{G}$. Then there exist projective unitary representations $\pi_{i}$ and $\sigma_{i}$ of $\mathscr{G}$ on $H_{i}$ and $K_{i}$ such that $\pi(g)=\oplus \pi_{i}(g) \otimes \sigma_{i}(g)$.

Proof. $\mathscr{G}$ acts by automorphisms on $M$ through conjugation. It therefore preserves the centre and hence the minimal central projections. Since $\mathscr{G}$ is connected and the action strong operator continuous, it must fix the central projections. Thus it fixes each block $H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$. It also normalises $B\left(H_{i}\right)$. If $W_{i}$ denotes the restriction of $\pi(g)$ to $H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$, then Ad $W_{i}$ restricts an automorphism $\alpha_{i}$ of $B\left(H_{i}\right)$. But, if $K$ is a Hilbert space, any automorphism $\alpha$ of $B(K)$ is inner: indeed if $\xi$ is a fixed unit vector in $K$ and $P_{\xi}$ is the rank one projection onto $\mathbb{C} \xi$, then $\alpha\left(P_{\xi}\right)=P_{\eta}$ for some unit vector $\eta$ and $U(T \xi)=\alpha(T) \eta \quad(T \in B(K))$ defines a unitary with $\alpha=\operatorname{Ad} U$. Hence $\alpha_{i}=$ Ad $U_{i}$ for $U_{i} \in U\left(H_{i}\right)$. But then $\left(U_{i}^{*} \otimes I\right) W_{i}$ commutes with $B\left(H_{i}\right) \otimes I$ and hence lies in $I \otimes B\left(K_{i}\right)$. Hence $\left(U_{i}^{*} \otimes I\right) W_{i}=I \otimes V_{i}$, so that $W_{i}=U_{i} \otimes V_{i}$. Thus we get the required homomorphism $\mathscr{G} \rightarrow \prod P U\left(H_{i}\right) \times P U\left(V_{i}\right)$, which is clearly continuous.

Corollary. There is a (unique) projective representation $\pi_{i}$ of $S U(1,1)$ on $H_{i}$ satisfying $\pi_{i}(\gamma) \pi_{i}(g) \pi_{i}(\gamma)^{*}=\pi_{i}\left(g \cdot \gamma^{-1}\right)$ for $g \in \mathscr{L} G$ and $\gamma \in S U(1,1)$.

Proof. If $H=\mathscr{F}_{V}^{\otimes \ell}$, we may write $H=\bigoplus H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$ where the $H_{i}$ 's are the distinct level $\ell$ irreducible representations of $\mathscr{L} G$ and the $K_{i}$ 's are multiplicity spaces. Then $\pi(\mathscr{L} G)^{\prime \prime}=\bigoplus B\left(H_{i}\right) \otimes I$ and the unitary representation of $\operatorname{SU}(1,1)$ normalises this algebra. By the coset construction, each $\gamma \in S U(1,1)$ has a decomposition $\pi(\gamma)=\bigoplus \pi_{i}(\gamma) \otimes \sigma_{i}(\gamma)$, where $\tau_{i}(\gamma)=$ $\pi_{i}(\gamma) \otimes \sigma_{i}(\gamma)$ is an ordinary representation of $S U(1,1)$ on $H_{i} \otimes K_{i}$. But $\pi_{i}\left(g \cdot \gamma^{-1}\right) \otimes I=\tau_{i}(\gamma)\left(\pi_{i}(g) \otimes I\right) \tau_{i}(\gamma)^{*}=\pi_{i}(\gamma) \pi_{i}(g) \pi_{i}(\gamma)^{*}$. Hence $\pi_{i}(\gamma) \pi_{i}(g)$ $\pi_{i}(\gamma)^{*}=\pi_{i}\left(g \cdot \gamma^{-1}\right)$. So, as before, the representation of $S U(1,1)$, now projective, is compatible with the central extension $\mathscr{L} G$.

## 7. Infinitesimal action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ on finite energy vectors

If $\mathrm{g}=\operatorname{Lie}(G)$, then Lie $(L G)=L \mathrm{~g}=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, \mathrm{~g}\right)$. Let $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ be the algebraic Lie algebra consisting of trigonometric polynomials with values in g . Its complexification is spanned by the functions $X_{n}(\theta)=e^{-i n \theta} X$ with $X \in \mathrm{~g}$. Rot $S^{1}$ and its Lie algebra act on $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$. The Lie algebra of Rot $S^{1}$ is generated by id where $[d, f](\theta)=-i f^{\prime}(\theta)$ for $f \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$. Thus $d$ may be identified with the operator $-i d / d \theta$. We obtain the Lie algebra relations $\left[X_{n}, Y_{m}\right]=[X, Y]_{n+m}$ and $\left[d, X_{n}\right]=-n X_{n}$. For $v \in V$, let $v(n)=a\left(v_{n}\right)$ where $v_{n} \in L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ is given by $v_{n}(\theta)=e^{-i n \theta} v$. In particular, if $\left(e_{i}\right)$ is an orthonormal basis of $V$, then we have fermions $e_{i}(n)$ for all $n$. If $\Omega$ denotes the vacuum vector in $\mathscr{F}_{V}$, then it is easy to see from its description as an exterior algebra that an orthonormal basis of $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ is given by

$$
e_{i_{1}}\left(n_{1}\right) e_{i_{2}}\left(n_{2}\right) \cdots e_{i_{p}}\left(n_{p}\right) e_{j_{1}}\left(m_{1}\right)^{*} e_{j_{2}}\left(m_{2}\right)^{*} \ldots e_{j_{q}}\left(m_{q}\right)^{*} \Omega
$$

where $n_{i} \leq 0$ and $m_{j}>0$. Moreover $e_{i}(n) \Omega=0$ for $n \geq 0$ and $e_{i}(n)^{*} \Omega=0$ for $n<0$. Since Rot $S^{1}$ commutes with the Hardy space projection on $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$, it is canonically quantised. Let $R_{\theta}$ be the corresponding representation on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$. Then $R_{\theta}=e^{i D \theta}$ where $D$ is self-adjoint. If $r_{\theta}$ is the action of Rot $S^{1}$ on $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ given by $\left(r_{\theta} f\right)(z)=f\left(e^{i \theta} z\right)$, then $r_{\theta}=e^{i d}$ where $d=-i \frac{d}{d \theta}$ (we always regard functions on $S^{1}$ as functions either of $z \in \mathbb{T}$ or of $\left.\theta \in[0,2 \pi]\right)$. Now $R_{\theta} a(f) R_{\theta}^{*}=a\left(r_{\theta} f\right)$. Hence $R_{\theta} v(m) R_{\theta}^{*}=e^{-i m \theta} v(m)$, so that $R_{\theta}$ acts on the basis vector $e_{i_{1}}\left(n_{1}\right) e_{i_{2}}\left(n_{2}\right) \cdots e_{i_{p}}\left(n_{p}\right) e_{j_{1}}\left(m_{1}\right)^{*} e_{j_{2}}\left(m_{2}\right)^{*} \cdots e_{j_{g}}\left(m_{q}\right)^{*} \Omega$ as multiplication by $e^{i M \theta}$ where $M=\sum m_{j}-\sum n_{i}$. Since $R_{\theta}=e^{i D \theta}$, it follows that $D$ acts on this basis vector as multiplication by $M$, i.e. this vector has energy $M=\sum m_{j}-\sum n_{i}$. In particular $D \Omega=0$ and we can check that $[D, v(n)]=-n v(n)$. Thus if $f$ is a trigonometric power series with values in $V$, we have $[D, a(f)]=a(d f)$. Note that if $T$ is a linear operator on $\mathscr{F}_{V}^{0}$ commuting with the $e_{i}(a)$ 's and $e_{i}(a)^{*}$ 's, then $T=\lambda I$ for $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ : for, as in section $3, \Omega$ is the unique vector such that $e_{i}(n)^{*} \Omega=0(n \geq 0), e_{i}(n) \Omega=0$ ( $n>0$ ) and $\Omega$ is cyclic.

Theorem. Let $\quad E_{i j}(n)=\sum_{m>0} e_{i}(n-m) e_{j}(-m)^{*}-\sum_{m \geq 0} e_{j}(m)^{*} e_{i}(m+n)$, and define $X(n)=\sum a_{i j} E_{i j}(n)$ for $X=\sum a_{i j} E_{i j} \in$ Lie $U(V) \subset \operatorname{End}(V)$. Then, as operators on $H^{0}$, we have
(a) $[X(m), a(f)]=a\left(X_{m} \cdot f\right)$ if $f$ is a trigonometric polynomial with values in $V$; equivalently $[X(n), v(m)]=(X v)(n+m)$.
(b) $[D, X(m)]=-m X(m)$.
(c) $[X(n), Y(m)]=[X, Y](n+m)+n(X, Y) \delta_{n+m, 0} I$ where $(X, Y)=-\operatorname{Tr}(X Y)$
$=\operatorname{Tr}\left(X Y^{*}\right)$ for $X, Y \in \operatorname{Lie} U(V)$.
Proof. (a) Observe that $\left[e_{i}(a)^{*} e_{j}(b), e_{k}(c)\right]=-\delta_{a c} \delta_{i k} e_{j}(b)$ and $\left[e_{j}(b) e_{i}(a)^{*}\right.$, $\left.e_{k}(c)\right]=\delta_{a c} \delta_{i k} e_{j}(b)$. Moreover if $i \neq j$, then $e_{i}(a)$ anticommutes with both $e_{j}(b)$ and $e_{j}(b)^{*}$. Using these identities, it is easy to check that $E_{i j}(n)$ satisfies
the commutation relations (a) with respect to the $e_{i}(n)$ 's. Note that $X(n) \boldsymbol{\Omega}=0$ for $n \geq 0$ since $e_{i}(n) \boldsymbol{\Omega}=0$ for $n \geq 0, e_{i}(n)^{*} \Omega=0$ for $n<0$ and $\left(\backslash\right.$,formally) $X(n)^{*}=-X(-n)$ for $X \in$ Lie $U(V)$.
(b) Since $\left[D, e_{i}(m)\right]=-m e_{i}(m)$ and $\left[D, e_{i}(m)^{*}\right]=m e_{i}(m)^{*}$, it follows that $[D, X(m)]=-m X(m)$.
(c) From (a) we find that $T=[X,(m), Y(n)]-[X, Y](m+n)$ commutes with all $e_{i}(a)$ 's and hence also all $e_{i}(a)^{*}$ 's by the adjointness property. Hence $[X(m), Y(n)]=[X, Y](m+n)+\lambda(X, Y)(m, n) I$, where $\lambda(X, Y)(m, n)$ is a scalar, bilinear in $X$ and $Y$. Now from (b), $[X(m), Y(n)]-[X, Y](m+n)$ lowers the energy by $-m-n$, so that $\lambda(X, Y)(m, n)=0$ unless $m+n=0$. To compute the value of $\lambda$ when $m=-n$, we note that we may assume that $m \geq 0$, since $\lambda(X, Y)(m, n)^{*}=\lambda(Y, X)(-n,-m)$ by the adjoint relations. Taking vacuum expectations, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lambda(X, Y)(-m, m)= & ([X(-m), Y(m)] \boldsymbol{\Omega}, \boldsymbol{\Omega})=(X(-m) \boldsymbol{\Omega} \\
& Y(-m) \boldsymbol{\Omega})=-m \operatorname{Tr}(X Y)=m(X, Y)
\end{aligned}
$$

In fact if $X=\sum a_{i j} E_{i j}$ and $Y=\sum b_{i j} E_{i j}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(X(-m) \Omega, Y(-m) \Omega) & =\sum_{i j p q} \sum_{r, s=0}^{m-1}\left(a_{i j} e_{j}(r)^{*} e_{i}(r-m) \Omega, b_{p q} e_{q}(s)^{*} e_{p}(s-m) \Omega\right) \\
& =m \sum a_{i j} \overline{b_{i j}}=m(X, Y)
\end{aligned}
$$

since the terms $e_{i}(a)^{*} e_{j}(b) \Omega$ with $a \geq 0$ and $b<0$ are orthonormal.

## 8. The exponentiation theorem

We wish to show that the Lie algebra action just defined on $\mathscr{F}_{V}$ exponentiates to give the fundamental representation of $L S U(N) \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$. We have already discussed the action of $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$, which is canonically quantised. So we now must show that if $x$ is an element of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ and $X$ is the corresponding operator constructed above, then $\pi \exp x$ and $\exp X$ have the same image in $P U(\mathscr{F})$. To see that this completely determines $\pi$ on $L G$, we need the following result on products of exponentials.

Exponential lemma. Every element of $L G$ is a product of exponentials in $L \mathrm{~g}=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, \mathrm{~g}\right)$. Products of exponentials in $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ are dense in $L G$.

Proof. If $g \in L G \subset C\left(S^{1}, M_{N}(\mathbb{C})\right)$ satisfies $\|g-I\|_{\infty}<1$, then $\log g=$ $\log (I-(I-g))$ lies in $C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, \mathrm{~g}\right)=L \mathrm{~g}$. Thus exp $L \mathrm{~g}$ contains an open neighbourhood of $I$ in $L G$. Since $L G$ is connected, $\exp L$ g must generate $L G$, as required.

The bilinear formulas for the Lie algebra operators $X$ immediately imply Sobolev type estimates for the infinitesimal action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ on finite energy
vectors. We define the Sobolev norms by $\|\xi\|_{s}=\left\|(I+D)^{s} \xi\right\|$ for $s \in \mathbb{R}$, usually a half-integer. Recall that if $A$ is a skew-adjoint operator, the smooth vectors for $A$ are the subspace $C^{\infty}(A)=\bigcap \mathscr{D}\left(A^{n}\right)$ and for any $\xi \in C^{\infty}(A)$ we have $e^{A t} \xi=\sum_{i=0}^{n} \frac{t^{k}}{k!} A^{k} \xi+O\left(t^{n+1}\right)$.

Exponentiation Theorem. Let $H=\mathscr{F}_{V}$ be the level one fermionic representation of $\operatorname{LSU}(V)$ and let $H^{0}$ be the subspace of finite energy vectors.
(1) For $x \in L^{0} g$, there is a constant $K$ depending on $s$ and $x$ such that $\|X \cdot \xi\|_{s} \leq K\|\xi\|_{s+1}$ for $\xi \in H^{0}, X=\pi(x)$.
(2) For each $x \in L^{0} g$, the corresponding operator $X$ is essentially skewadjoint on $H^{0}$ and leaves $H^{0}$ invariant.
(3) Each vector in $H^{0}$ is a $C^{\infty}$ vector for any $x \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$.
(4) For $x \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$, the unitary $\exp (X)$ agrees up to a scalar with $\pi(\exp (x))$.

Proof. (1) It clearly suffices to prove the estimates in the lemma for $X=E_{i j}(n)$ and $\xi$ of fixed energy, say $D \xi=\mu \xi$. Then $E_{i j}(n) \xi=$ $\sum_{m>0} e_{i}(n-m) e_{j}(-m)^{*} \xi-\sum_{m \geq 0} e_{j}(m)^{*} e_{i}(m+n) \xi$. So $\left\|E_{i j}(n) \xi\right\| \leq 2(|n|$ $+\mu)\|\xi\|$, since at most $2(|n|+\bar{\mu})$ of the terms in the sums can be non-zero and each has norm bounded by $\|\xi\|$. Hence for $s \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|E_{i j}(n) \xi\right\|_{s} & \leq(1+|n|+\mu)^{s}\left\|E_{i j}(n) \xi\right\| \leq 2(1+|n|+\mu)^{s}(|n|+\mu) \\
& \leq 2(1+|n|)^{s+1}(1+\mu)^{s+1}\|\xi\| \leq 2(1+|n|)^{s+1}\|\xi\|_{s+1}
\end{aligned}
$$

(2) Clearly any $X \in L^{0}$ g acts on $H^{0}$. We need the Glimm-Jaffe-Nelson commutator theorem see [11,31] or [42]: if $D$ is the energy operator on $H^{0}$ and $X: H^{0} \rightarrow H^{0}$ is formally skew-adjoint with $X(D+I)^{-1},(D+I)^{-1} X$ and $(D+I)^{-1 / 2}[X, D](D+I)^{-1 / 2}$ bounded, then the closure of $X$ is skew-adjoint. The Sobolev estimates show that these conditions hold for $D$ and $X$, since $[D, X]$ is actually in $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$.
(3) Since $X H^{0} \subset H^{0}$ and the $C^{\infty}$ vectors for $X$ are just $\cap \mathscr{D}\left(X^{n}\right)$, it follows that the vectors in $H^{0}$ are $C^{\infty}$ vectors for $X$.
(4) We prove the commutation relation $e^{t X} a(f) e^{-t X}=a\left(e^{t x} f\right)$ for $f \in$ $L^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$. We start by noting that

$$
a(X f) \xi=X a(f) \xi-a(f) X \xi
$$

for $f$ a trigonometric polynomial with values in $V, X \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ and $\xi \in H^{0}$. We fix $X$ and $f$ and denote by $C^{\infty}(X)$ the space of $C^{\infty}$ vectors for $X$, i.e. $\cap \mathscr{D}\left(X^{n}\right)$. Now say $\xi \in \mathscr{D}(X)$ and $f \in L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$. Take $\xi_{n} \in H^{0}$, such that $\xi_{n} \rightarrow \xi$ and $X \xi_{n} \rightarrow X \xi$, and $f_{n}$ trigonometric polynomials with values in $V$ such that $f_{n} \rightarrow f$. Then $a\left(f_{n}\right) \xi_{n} \rightarrow a(f) \xi$ and $X a\left(f_{n}\right) \xi_{n}=a\left(X f_{n}\right) \xi_{n}+$ $a\left(f_{n}\right) X \xi_{n} \rightarrow a(X f) \xi+a(f) X \xi$. Since $X$ is closed, we deduce that $a(f) \xi$ lies in $\mathscr{D}(X)$ and $a(X f) \xi=X a(f) \xi-a(f) X \xi$. Successive applications of this identity imply that $a(f) \xi$ lies in $\mathscr{D}\left(X^{n}\right)$ for all $n$ if $\xi$ lies in $C^{\infty}(X)$, so that $a(f) C^{\infty}(X) \subset C^{\infty}(X)$.

Now take $\xi, \eta \in C^{\infty}(X)$ and consider $F(t)=\left(e^{-X t} a\left(e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, \eta\right)=$ $\left(a\left(e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, e^{X t} \eta\right)$. Since $\xi, \eta$ lie in $C^{\infty}(X)$, we have $e^{X(t+s)} \xi=e^{X t} \xi+$ $s X e^{X t} \xi+O\left(s^{2}\right)$ and $e^{X(t+s)} \eta=e^{X t} \eta+s X e^{X t} \eta+O\left(s^{2}\right)$. For any $f$, we have $e^{x(t+s)} f=e^{x t} f+s x e^{x t} f+O\left(s^{2}\right)$ in $L^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$. Since $\|a(g)\|=\|g\|$, it follows that $a\left(e^{x(t+s)} f\right)=a\left(e^{x t} f\right)+s a\left(x e^{x t} f\right)+O\left(t^{2}\right)$ in the operator norm. Hence we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
F(t+s)= & \left(a\left(e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, e^{X t} \eta\right)+s\left[\left(a\left(e^{x t} f\right) X e^{X t} \xi, e^{X t} \eta\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\left(a\left(x e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, e^{X t} \eta\right)+\left(a\left(e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, X e^{X t} \eta\right)\right]+O\left(s^{2}\right) \\
= & \left(a\left(e^{x t} f\right) e^{X t} \xi, e^{X t} \eta\right)+O\left(s^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

since $[X, a(g)]=a(x g)$. Thus $F(t)$ is differentiable with $F^{\prime}(t) \equiv 0$. Hence $F(t)$ is constant and therefore equal to $F(0)$. This proves that $e^{-t X} a\left(e^{t x} f\right) e^{t X} \xi=a(f) \xi$ for $\xi \in H^{0} \subset C^{\infty}(X)$. Hence $a\left(e^{t x} f\right)=e^{t X} a(f) e^{-t X}$, as required. Thus $e^{t X}$ implements the Bogoliubov automorphism corresponding to $e^{t x}$.

Corollary. Let H be a level € positive energy representation of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ and let $H^{0}$ be the subspace of finite energy vectors.
(1) There is a projective representation of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$ on $H^{0}$ such that $[D, X(n)]=-n X(n), \quad D^{*}=D, \quad X(n)^{*}=-X(-n) \quad$ and $\quad[X(m), Y(n)]=$ $[X, Y](n+m)+m \ell \delta_{m+n, 0}(X, Y)$.
(2) For each $x \in L^{0} g$, the corresponding operator $X$ is essentially skewadjoint on $H^{0}$ and leaves $H^{0}$ invariant.
(3) For $x \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$, the unitary $\exp (X)$ agrees up to a scalar with the corresponding group element in $L G$.
(4) Each vector in $H^{0}$ is a $C^{\infty}$ vector for any $X$.

Proof. We observe that the embedding $\operatorname{LSU}(N) \subset L U(N \ell)$ gives all representations of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ at level $\ell$. The continuity properties of the action of the larger group and its Lie algebra are immediately inherited by $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$. Note that it is clear from the functoriality of the fermionic construction that the restriction of the fermionic representation of $L U(N \ell)$ to $L U(N)$ can be identified with $\mathscr{F}^{\otimes \ell}$ where $\mathscr{F}$ is the (level 1) fermionic representation of $L U(N)$. The other properties follow immediately from the following result, applied to irreducible summands $K$ of $H=\mathscr{F}^{\otimes \ell}$.

Lemma. Let $X$ be a skew-adjoint operator on $H$ with core $H^{0}$ such that $X\left(H^{0}\right) \subseteq H^{0}$. Let $K$ be a closed subspace such that $P\left(H^{0}\right) \subseteq H^{0}$, where $P$ is the projection onto $K$. Let $K^{0}=K \cap H^{0}$. Then $X\left(K^{0}\right) \subseteq K^{0}$ iff $\exp (X t) K=K$ for all $t$. In this case $K^{0}$ is a core for $\left.X\right|_{K}$.

Proof. Suppose that $K$ is invariant under $\exp (X t)$. Then $\exp (X t) \xi=$ $\xi+t X \xi+\cdots$ for $\xi \in K^{0}$ and hence $X K^{0} \subseteq K \cap H^{0}=K^{0}$. Conversely, if $X\left(K^{0}\right) \subseteq K^{0}$, take $\xi \in \mathscr{D}(X)$ and let $P$ be the orthogonal projection onto $K$.

It will suffice to show that $P \xi \in \mathscr{D}(X)$ and $X P \xi=P X \xi$, for then $X$ commutes with $P$ in the sense of the spectral theorem. Since $P\left(H^{0}\right) \subseteq H^{0}$, we have $H^{0}=H^{0} \cap K \bigoplus H^{0} \cap K^{\perp}$. Since $X$ is skew-adjoint and $X\left(K^{0}\right) \subseteq K^{0}$, it follows that $X$ leaves $H^{0} \cap K^{\perp}$ invariant. Thus $P X=X P$ on $H^{0}$. Take $\xi_{n} \in H^{0}$ such that $\xi_{n} \rightarrow \xi$ and $X \xi_{n} \rightarrow X \xi$. Then $X P \xi_{n}=P X \xi_{n} \rightarrow P X \xi$ and $P \xi_{n} \rightarrow \xi$. Since $X$ is closed, $X P \xi=P X \xi$ as required. Finally since $P \xi_{n} \rightarrow P \xi$ and $X P \xi_{n} \rightarrow X P \xi$, it follows that $K^{0}$ is a core for $\left.X\right|_{K}$.

## 9. Classification of positive energy representations of level $\ell$

Proposition. Let $(\pi, H)$ be an irreducible positive energy projective representation of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ of level $\ell$.
(1) The action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$ on $H^{0}$ is algebraically irreducible.
(2) $H(0)$ is irreducible as an $S U(N)$-module.
(3) If $H(0)=V_{f}$, then $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$.
(4) (Existence) If $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$, there is a an irreducible positive energy representation of $L G$ of level $\ell$ of the above form with $H(0) \cong V_{f}$ as $S U(N)$ modules.
(5) (Uniqueness) If $H$ and $H^{\prime}$ are irreducible positive energy representations of level $\ell$ of the above form with $H(0) \cong H^{\prime}(0)$ as $S U(N)$-modules, then $H$ and $H^{\prime}$ are unitarily equivalent as projective representations of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Proof. (1) Recall that $H$ is irreducible as an $L G \rtimes \mathbb{T}$-module iff it is irreducible as an $L G$-module by the proposition in section 6 . Any subspace $K$ of $H^{0}$ invariant under $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$ is clearly invariant under Rot $S^{1}$. It therefore coincides with the space of finite energy vectors of its closure. By the lemma in section 8 , its closure is invariant under all operators $\exp (X)$ for $x \in L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$. But $\exp \left(L^{0} \mathbf{g}\right)$ generates a dense subgroup of $L G$, so the closure must be invariant under $L G$ and therefore coincide with the whole of $H$ by irreducibility. Hence $K=H^{0}$ as required.
(2) Let $V$ be an irreducible $S U(N)$-submodule of $\mathrm{H}(0)$. From (1), the $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$-module generated by $V$ is the whole of $H^{0}$. Since $D$ fixes $V$, it follows that the $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$-module generated by $V$ is the whole of $H^{0}$. The commutation rules show that any monomial in the $X(n)$ 's can be written as a sum of monomials of the form $P_{-} P_{0} P_{+}$, where $P_{-}$is a monomial in the $X(n)$ 's for $n<0$ (energy raising operators), $P_{0}$ is a monomial in the $X(0)$ 's (constant energy operators) and $P_{+}$is a monomial in the $X(n)$ 's with $n>0$ (energy lowering operators). Hence $H^{0}$ is spanned by products $P_{-} v(v \in V)$. Since the lowest energy subspace of this $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$-module is $V, H(0)=V$, so that $H(0)$ is irreducible as a $G$-module.
(3) Suppose that $H(0) \cong V_{f}$ and let $v \in H(0)$ be a highest weight vector, so that $\left(E_{i i}(0)-E_{j j}(0)\right) v=\left(f_{i}-f_{j}\right) v$ and $E_{i j}(0) v=0$ if $i<j$. Let $E=$ $E_{N 1}(1), F=E_{1 N}(-1)$ and $H=[E, F]=E_{N N}(0)-E_{11}(0)+\ell$. Thus $H^{*}=H$, $E^{*}=F,[H, E]=2 E$ and $[H, F]=-2 F$. Moreover $E v=0$ and $H v=\lambda v$ with $\lambda=f_{N}-f_{1}+\ell$. By induction on $k$, we have $\left[E, F^{k+1}\right]=(k+1) F^{k}(H-k I)$
for $\quad k \geq 0$. Hence $\left(F^{k+1} v, F^{k+1} v\right)=\left(F^{*} F^{k+1} v, F^{k} v\right)=\left(E F^{k+1} v, F^{k} v\right)=$ $(k+1)(\lambda-k)\left(F^{k} v, F^{k} v\right)$. For these norms to be non-negative for all $k \geq 0$, $\lambda$ has to be non-negative, so that $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$ as required.
(4) We have $\mathscr{F}_{V}^{\otimes \ell}(0)=(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell}$. By the results of section 6 , the $L G$ module generated by any irreducible summand $V_{f}$ of $\mathscr{F}_{V}(0)$ gives an irreducible positive energy representation $H$ with $H(0) \cong V_{f}$. So certainly any irreducible summand in $\Lambda V^{\otimes \ell}$ appears as an $H(0)$. From the tensor product rules with the $\lambda^{k} V$ 's, these representations are precisely those with $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$.
(5) Any monomial $A$ in operators from $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$ is a sum of monomials $R D L$ with $R$ a monomial in energy raising operators, $D$ a monomial in constant energy operators and $L$ a monomial in energy lowering operators. As in section 2, if $v, w \in H(0)$ the inner products $\left(A_{1} v, A_{2} w\right)$ are uniquely determined by $v, w$ and the monomials $A_{i}$ : for $A_{2}^{*} A_{1}$ is a sum of terms $R D L$ and $(R D L v, w)=\left(D L v, R^{*} w\right)$ with $R^{*}$ an energy lowering operator. Hence, if $H^{\prime}$ is another irreducible positive energy representation with $H^{\prime}(0) \cong H(0)$ by a unitary isomorphism $v \mapsto v^{\prime}, U(A v)=A v^{\prime}$ defines a unitary map of $H^{0}$ onto $\left(H^{\prime}\right)^{0}$ intertwining $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$. This induces a unique unitary isomorphism $H \rightarrow H^{\prime}$ which intertwines the one parameter subgroups corresponding to the skewadjoint elements in $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$, since $H^{0}$ and $H^{\prime 0}$ are cores for the corresponding skew-adjoint operators. But these subgroups generate a dense subgroup of $L G$, so that $U$ must intertwine the actions of $L G$, i.e. $\pi^{\prime}(g)=U \pi(g) U^{*}$ in $P U\left(H^{\prime}\right)$ for $g \in L G$. Thus $H$ and $H^{\prime}$ are isomorphic as projective representations of $L G$. From section $6, H$ and $H^{\prime}$ are therefore unitarily equivalent as projective representations of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Corollary. The irreducible positive energy representations $H$ of $L G$ of level $\ell$ are uniquely determined by their lowest energy subspace $H(0)$, an irreducible $G$-module. Only finitely many irreducible representations of $G$ occur at level $\ell$ : their signatures must satisfy the quantisation condition $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$. The action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$ on $H^{0}$ is algebraically irreducible.

## II. Local loop groups and their von Neumann algebras

## 10. von Neumann algebras

Let $H$ be a Hilbert space. The commutant of $S \subset B(H)$ is defined by $S^{\prime}=\{T \in B(H): T x=x T$ for all $x \in S\}$. If $S^{*}=S$, for example if $S$ is a *algebra or a subgroup of $U(H)$, then $S^{\prime}$ is a unital *-algebra, closed in the weak or strong operator topology. Such an algebra is called a von Neumann algebra. von Neumann's double commutant theorem states that $S^{\prime \prime}$ coincides with the von Neumann algebra generated by $S$, i.e. the weak operator closure of the unital *-algebra generated by $S$. Thus a *-subalgebra $M \subseteq B(H)$ is a von Neumann algebra iff $M=M^{\prime \prime}$. By the spectral theorem, the spectral projections (or more generally bounded Borel functions) of any self-adjoint or unitary operator in $M$ must also lie in $M$. This implies in particular that $M$
is generated both by its projections and its unitaries. Note that, if $M=S^{\prime}$, the projections in $M$ correspond to subrepresentations for $S$, i.e. subspaces invariant under $S$.

The centre of a von Neumann algebra $M$ is given by $Z(M)=M \cap M^{\prime}$. A von Neumann algebra is said to be a factor iff $Z(M)=\mathbb{C} I$. A unitary representation of a group or a *-representation of a *-algebra is said to be a factor representation if the commutant is a factor. If $H$ is a representation with commutant $M$, then two subrepresentations $H_{1}$ and $H_{2}$ of $H$ are unitarily equivalent iff the corresponding projections $P_{1}, P_{2} \in M$ are the initial and final projections of a partial isometry $U \in M$, i.e. $U^{*} U=P_{1}$ and $U U^{*}=P_{2} . P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are then said to be equivalent in the sense of Murray and von Neumann [26]. We shall only need the following elementary result, which is an almost immediate consequence of the definitions.

Proposition. If $(\pi, H)$ is a factor representation of a set $S$ with $S^{*}=S$ and $\left(\pi_{1}, H_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\pi_{2}, H_{2}\right)$ are subrepresentations, then
(1) there is a unique *-isomorphism $\theta$ of $\pi_{1}(S)^{\prime \prime}$ onto $\pi_{2}(S)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\theta\left(\pi_{1}(x)\right)=\pi_{2}(x)$ for $x \in S$;
(2) the intertwiner space $\mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Hom}_{S}\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right)$ satisfies $\overline{\mathscr{X} H_{1}}=H_{2}$, so in particular is non-zero;
(3) $\theta(a) T=$ Ta for all $a \in \pi_{1}(S)^{\prime \prime}$ and $T \in \mathscr{X}$;
(4) if $\mathscr{X}_{0} \subseteq \mathscr{X}$ with $\overline{X_{0} H_{1}}=H_{2}$, then $\theta(a)$ is the unique $b \in \pi_{2}(S)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $b T=$ Ta for all $T \in \mathscr{X}_{0}$.

Proof. Let $M=\pi(S)^{\prime \prime}$ and $M_{i}=\pi_{i}(S)^{\prime \prime}$. Then $\overline{M^{\prime} H_{i}}$ is invariant under both $M$ and $M^{\prime}$. Hence the corresponding projection lies in $M \cap M^{\prime}=\mathbb{C}$ (since $M$ is a factor). So $\overline{M^{\prime} H_{i}}=H$. Let $p_{i}$ be the projection onto $H_{i}$, so that $p_{i} \in M^{\prime}$. Clearly $M_{i}=M p_{i}$. Moreover, the map $\theta_{i}: M \rightarrow M_{i}, a \mapsto a p_{i}$ must be a *isomorphism: for $a p_{i}=0$ implies $a M^{\prime} H_{i}=(0)$ and hence $a=0$. By definition $\theta_{i}(\pi(x))=\pi_{i}(x)$ for $x \in S$. Now set $\theta=\theta_{2} \theta_{1}^{-1} ; \theta$ is unique because $M_{1}$ is generated by $\pi_{1}(S)$.

Since $\mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Hom}_{S}\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right)=p_{2} M^{\prime} p_{1}$, we have $T \theta_{1}(x)=\theta_{2}(x) T$ for all $x \in M$. Hence $\theta(a) T=T a$ for $a \in M_{1}$ and $T \in \operatorname{Hom}_{S}\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right)$. Moreover $\overline{\mathscr{X} H_{1}}=\overline{p_{2} M^{\prime} H_{2}}=\overline{p_{2} H}=H_{2}$. Conversely suppose that $\mathscr{X}_{0} \subset \operatorname{Hom}_{S}\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right)$ is a subspace such that $\mathscr{X}_{0} H_{1}$ is dense in $H_{2}$ and $a \in M_{1}, b \in B\left(H_{2}\right)$ satisfy $b T=T a$ for all $T \in \mathscr{X}_{0}$. Let $c=b-\theta(a)$. Then $c \mathscr{X}_{0}=(0)$ and hence $c H_{2}=(0)$, so that $c=0$. Thus $b=\theta(a)$ as required.

## 11. Abstract modular theory

Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, and $K \subset H$ a closed real subspace with $K \cap i K=(0)$ and $K+i K$ dense in $H$. Let $e$ and $f$ be the projections onto $K$ and $i K$ respectively and set $r=(e+f) / 2, t=(e-f) / 2$. Then $K^{\perp}, i K^{\perp}$ and $i K$ satisfy the same conditions as $K$, where $\perp$ is taken with respect to the real inner product $\operatorname{Re}(\xi, \eta)$.

Proposition 1. (1) $0 \leq r \leq I, t, r$ are self-adjoint, $t$ is conjugate-linear, $r$ is linear, and $t, I-r, r$ have zero kernels.
(2) $t^{2}=r(I-r), r t=t(I-r),(I-r) t=t r$.
(3) $e t=t(I-f), f t=t(I-e)$.
(4) If $t$ has polar decomposition $t=|t| j=j|t|$, then $j^{2}=I$, ej $=j(I-f)$ and $f j=j(I-e)$.
(5) $j K=i K^{\perp}$ and $(j \xi, \eta) \in \mathbb{R}$ for $\xi, \eta \in K$.
(6) Let $\delta^{i t}=(I-r)^{i t} r^{-i t}$. Then $j \delta^{i t}=\delta^{i t} j$ and $\delta^{i t} K=K$.

Proof. (1), (2) and (3) are straightforward. (4) follows from (3), because $e$ and $f$ commute with $t^{2}=(e-f)^{2} / 4$, hence with $|t|$, and $|t|$ has zero kernel. (4) implies (5), since $j e j=I-f$. Finally since $j r j=I-r$ and $j$ is conjugatelinear, $j$ commutes with $\delta^{i t}$. So $\delta^{i t}$ commutes with $j, r,|t|=\sqrt{r(I-r)}$ and hence $t$. So $\delta^{i t}$ commutes with $e$ and $f$.

Proposition 2 (characterisation of modular operators). (1) (Kubo-MartinSchwinger condition) For each $\xi \in K$, the function $f(t)=\delta^{i t} \xi$ on $\mathbb{R}$ extends (uniquely) to a continuous bounded function $f(z)$ on $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic in $-1 / 2<\operatorname{Im} z<0$. Furthermore $f(t-i / 2)=j f(t)$ for $t \in \mathbb{R}$.
(2) (KMS uniqueness) Suppose that $u_{t}$ is a one-parameter unitary group on $H$ and $j_{1}$ is a conjugate-linear involution such that $u_{t} K=K$ and $j_{1} u_{t}=u_{t} j_{1}$. Suppose that there is a dense subspace $K_{1}$ of $K$ such that for each $\xi \in K_{1}$ the function $g(t)=u_{t} \xi$ extends to a bounded continuous function $g(z)$ on the strip $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$ into $H$, holomorphic in $-1 / 2<\operatorname{Im} z<0$, such that $f(t-i / 2)=j_{1} f(t)$ for $t \in \mathbb{R}$. Then $u_{t}=\delta^{i t}$ and $j_{1}=j$.

Proof. (1) (cf [33]) If $\xi \in K$, then $\xi=p \xi=(r+t) \xi=r^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(r^{\frac{1}{2}}+(I-r)^{\frac{1}{2}} j\right) \xi$. Thus $\xi=r^{\frac{1}{2}} \eta$, where $\eta=\left(r^{\frac{1}{2}}+(I-r)^{\frac{1}{2}} j\right) \xi$. Set $f(z)=(I-r)^{i z} r^{\frac{1}{2}-i z} \eta$ for $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$.
(2) For $\xi \in K_{1}$, set $h(z)=(g(z), g(\bar{z}-i / 2))$. Then $h$ is continuous and bounded on $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic on $-1 / 2<\operatorname{Im} z<0$. By uniqueness of analytic extension, $u_{t} f(z)=f(z+t)$ since they agree for $z$ real. Hence $h(z+t)=h(z)$, so that $h$ is constant on lines parallel to the real axis and hence constant everywhere. Since $h(-i / 4)=\|g(-i / 4)\|^{2} \geq 0$, it follows that $h(0) \geq 0$, i.e. $\left(j_{1} \xi, \xi\right) \geq 0$. Polarising, we get $\left(j_{1} \xi, \eta\right) \in \mathbb{R}$ for all $\xi, \eta \in K$. Since $u_{t}$ leaves $K$ and $i K$ invariant, it follows that $u_{t}$ commutes with $e$ and $f$ and hence $\delta^{i t}$. Now let $f(z)$ be the function corresponding to $\xi$ and $\delta^{i t}$. Define $k(z)=(g(z), j f(z))$ for $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$. Then $k(t)=\left(u_{t} \xi, j \delta^{i t} \xi\right)$ is real for $t \in \mathbb{R}$ and $k(t-i / 2)=\left(j_{1} u_{t} \xi, j^{2} \delta^{i t} \xi\right)=\left(j_{1} u_{t} \xi, \delta^{i t} \xi\right)$ is real for $t \in \mathbb{R}$. $k$ is bounded and continuous on $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$ and holomorphic on $0<\operatorname{Im} z<\frac{1}{2}$. By Schwartz's reflection principle, $k$ extends to a holomorphic function on $\mathbb{C}$ satisfying $k(z+i)=k(z)$. This extension is bounded and therefore constant by Liouville's theorem. Hence $k(t)=k(0)=k(-i / 2)$. Thus $\left(u_{t} \delta^{-i t} \xi, j \xi\right)=(\xi, j \xi)=k(-i / 2)=\left(j_{1} \xi, \xi\right)$. By polarisation it follows that $u_{t}=\delta^{i t}$ and $j=j_{1}$, as required.

## 12. Modular operators and Takesaki devissage for von Neumann algebras

The main application of the modular theory for a closed real subspace is when the subspace arises from a von Neumann algebra with a vector cyclic for the algebra and its commutant. Let $M \subset B(H)$ be a von Neumann algebra and let $\Omega \in H$ (the "vacuum vector") satisfy $\overline{M \Omega}=H=\overline{M^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\Omega}}$. The condition $\overline{M^{\prime} \Omega}=H$ is clearly equivalent to the condition that $\Omega$ is separating for $M$, i.e. $a \Omega=0$ iff $a=0$ for $a \in M$. If in addition $M$ and $H$ are $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-graded, then the graded commutant $M^{q}$ equals $\kappa M^{\prime} \kappa^{-1}$ where the Klein transformation $\kappa$ is given by multiplication by 1 on the even part of $H$ and by $i$ on the odd part; in this case we will always require that $\Omega$ be even. Let $K=\overline{M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega}$, a closed real subspace of $H$.

Lemma 1. $K+i K$ is dense in $H$ and $K \cap i K=(0)$.
Proof. $K+i K \supseteq M \Omega=M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega+i M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega$, so $K+i K$ is dense. Now $K^{\perp} \supseteq i M_{\mathrm{sa}}^{\prime} \Omega$, since for $a \in M_{\mathrm{sa}}, b \in M_{\mathrm{sa}}^{\prime}$, we have $\operatorname{Re}(a \Omega, i b \Omega)=\operatorname{Re}-i(a b \Omega, \Omega)=0$, because $(a b)^{*}=a b$ implies that $(a b \Omega, \Omega)$ is real. Hence $i K^{\perp} \supseteq M_{\text {sa }}^{\prime} \Omega$. Thus $K^{\perp}+i K^{\perp} \supseteq M^{\prime} \Omega$, so $K^{\perp}+i K^{\perp}$ is dense. So $K \cap i K=\left(K^{\perp}+i K^{\perp}\right)^{\perp}=(0)$.

Let $\Delta^{i t}$ and $J$ be the modular operators on $H$ associated with $K=\overline{M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega}$. The main theorem of Tomita-Takesaki asserts that $J M J=M^{\prime}$ and $\Delta^{i t} M \Delta^{-i t}=M$. (General proofs can be found in [8] or [33] for example; for hyperfinite von Neumann algebras an elementary proof is given in [42], based on [33] and [16].) Once the theorem is known, the map $x \mapsto J x^{*} J$ gives an isomorphism between $M^{\mathrm{op}}$ ( $M$ with multiplication reversed) and $M^{\prime}$ and $\sigma_{t}(x)=\Delta^{i t} x \Delta^{-i t}$ gives a one-parameter group of automorphisms of $M$. Our development, however, does not logically require any form of the main theorem of Tomita-Takesaki; instead we verify it directly for fermions and deduce it for subalgebras invariant under the modular group using a crucial result of Takesaki ("Takesaki devissage").

Lemma 2. If $J M J \subseteq M^{\prime}$, then $J M J=M^{\prime}$.
Proof (cf [33]). Clearly $J \Omega=\Omega$. If $A, B \in M_{\mathrm{sa}}^{\prime}$, then $(J B \Omega, A \Omega)$ is real since $A \Omega, B \Omega$ lie in $i K^{\perp}$ and $J$ is also the modular conjugation operator for $i K^{\perp}$. Thus $(A J B J \Omega, \Omega)=(J B \Omega, A \Omega)=(A \Omega, J B \Omega)=(J B J A \Omega, \Omega)$. By complex linearity in $A$ and conjugate-linearity in $B$, it follows that $(A J B J \Omega, \Omega)=$ $(J B J A \Omega, \Omega)$ for all $A, B \in M^{\prime}$. Now take $a, b \in M^{\prime}, x, y \in M$ and set $A=a$ and $B=J y^{*} J b J x J$. Since $J x J, J y J \in M^{\prime}, B$ lies in $M^{\prime}$. Hence $(J b J a x \Omega, y \Omega)=$ $(a J b J x \Omega, y \Omega)$. Since $\overline{M \Omega}=H$, this implies that $a J b J=J b J a$. Thus $J M^{\prime} J \subseteq M^{\prime \prime}=M$ and so $J M J=M^{\prime}$.

Corollary. If $A \subset B(H)$ is an Abelian von Neumann algebra and $\Omega$ a cyclic vector for $A$, then $\Delta^{i t}=I, J a \Omega=a^{*} \Omega$ and $J a J=a^{*}$ for $a \in A$, and $A=J A J=A^{\prime}$.

Proof. Since $A \subset A^{\prime}, \Omega$ is separating for $A$. Thus $J a \Omega=a^{*} \Omega$ extends by continuity to an antiunitary. If $a \in A_{\mathrm{sa}}$, the map $f(z)=a$ satisfies the KMS conditions for the trivial group and $J$, so they must be the modular operators. Since $J A J=A \subseteq A^{\prime}$, the last assertion follows from the lemma.

Theorem (Takesaki devissage [37]). Let $M \subset B(H)$ be a von Neumann algebra, $\Omega \in H$ cyclic for $M$ and $M^{\prime}$ and $\Delta^{i t}$, $J$ the corresponding modular operators. Suppose that $\Delta^{i t} M \Delta^{-i t}=M$ and $J M J=M^{\prime}$. If $N \subset M$ is a von Neumann subalgebra such that $\Delta^{i t} N \Delta^{-i t}=N$, then
(a) $\Delta^{i t}$ and $J$ restrict to the modular automorphism group $\Delta_{1}^{i t}$ and conjugation operator $J_{1}$ of $N$ for $\Omega$ on the closure $H_{1}$ of $N \Omega$.
(b) $\Delta_{1}^{i t} N \Delta_{1}^{-i t}=N$ and $J_{1} N J_{1}=N^{\prime}$.
(c) If $e$ is the projection onto $H_{1}$, then $e M e=N e$ and $N=\{x \in M$ : $x e=e x\}$ (the Jones relations [18]).
(d) $H_{1}=H$ iff $M=N$.
(e) The modular group fixes the centre. In fact $\Delta^{i t} x \Delta^{-i t}=x$ and $J x J=$ $x^{*}$ for $x \in Z(M)=M \cap M^{\prime}$.

Proof. (a) By KMS uniqueness, $\Delta^{i t}$ and $J$ restrict to $\Delta_{1}^{i t}$ and $J_{1}$ on $H_{1}=e H$.
(b) It is clear that $\mathrm{Ad} \Delta_{1}^{i t}$ normalises $N e=N_{1}$ on $H_{1}$. Now $J_{1} N e J_{1}=e J N J e \subseteq e J M J e=e M^{\prime} e \subseteq e N^{\prime} e=(e N)^{\prime}$. Thus $J_{1} N_{1} J_{1} \subseteq N_{1}^{\prime} . \quad$ By Lemma 2, $J_{1} N_{1} J_{1}=N_{1}^{\prime}$.
(c) Since $M^{\prime} \subset N^{\prime}$ and $M^{\prime}=J M J$, this implies that $M \subset J N^{\prime} J$. Compressing by $e$ we get $e M e \subseteq e J N^{\prime} J e=J e N^{\prime} e J=J_{1} e N^{\prime} e J_{1}=J_{1}(N \cdot e)^{\prime} J_{1}=N \cdot e$. But trivially $N e \subseteq e M e$, so that $e M e=N e$. Clearly $N \subset\langle e\rangle^{\prime}$. Now suppose that $x \in M$ commutes with $e$. Then $x e=y e$ for some $y \in N$. But then $(x-y) e=0$, so that $(x-y) \Omega=0$. Since $\Omega$ is separating for $M, x=y$ lies in $N$.
(d) Immediate from (c).
(e) Immediate from (a) and the corollary to Lemma 2.

## 13. Araki duality and modular theory for Clifford algebras

We develop the abstract results implicit in the work of Araki on the canonical commutation and anticommutation relations [1, 2]. This reduces the computation of the modular operators for Clifford algebras to "one particle states", i.e. to the prequantised Hilbert space. We first recall that the assignment $H \mapsto \Lambda(H)$ defines a functor from the additive theory of Hilbert spaces and contractions to the multiplicative theory of Hilbert spaces and contractions. A contraction $A: H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}$ between two Hilbert spaces is a bounded linear map with $\|A\| \leq 1$. We define $\Lambda(A)$ to be $A^{\otimes k}$ on $\Lambda^{k}\left(H_{1}\right) \subset H_{1}^{\otimes k}$. Then $\Lambda(A)$ gives a bounded linear operator from $\Lambda\left(H_{1}\right)$ to $\Lambda\left(H_{2}\right)$ with $\|\Lambda(A)\| \leq 1$. Clearly if $\|A\|,\|B\| \leq 1$, then $\Lambda(A B)=\Lambda(A) \Lambda(B)$. Also $\Lambda(A)^{*}=\Lambda\left(A^{*}\right)$, so if $A$ is unitary, then so too is $\Lambda(A)$. Similarly, if $H_{1}=H_{2}=H$, then if $A$ is self-adjoint or positive, so too is $\Lambda(A)$. In particular if $A=U P$ is the polar decomposition of $A$ with $U$ unitary, then
$\Lambda(A)=\Lambda(U) \Lambda(P)$ is the polar decomposition of $\Lambda(A)$ by uniqueness. Moreover $\Lambda\left(A^{i t}\right)=\Lambda(A)^{i t}$ if $A$ is in addition positive (note that $\left.\left(A^{i t}\right)^{\otimes k}=\left(A_{\tilde{N}}^{\otimes k}\right)^{i t}\right)$. Similarly every conjugate-linear contraction $T$ induces an operator $\tilde{\Lambda}(T)\left(\xi_{1} \wedge \xi_{2} \wedge \cdots \wedge \xi_{n}\right)=T \xi_{n} \wedge T \xi_{n-1} \wedge \cdots \wedge T \xi_{1}$. Note that $\tilde{\Lambda}(T)=\kappa^{-1} \Lambda(i T)$, where $\kappa$ is the Klein transformation. If $T=U P$ is the polar decomposition of $T$ with $U$ a conjugate-linear unitary, then $\tilde{\Lambda}(T)=\tilde{\Lambda}(U) \Lambda(P)$ is the polar decomposition of $\tilde{\Lambda}(T)$. If $U$ is a linear or conjugate-linear unitary, then it is easy to check that $\Lambda(U) a(\xi) \Lambda(U)^{*}=$ $a(U \xi)$ and $\Lambda(U) c(\xi) \Lambda(U)^{*}=c(U \xi)$.

Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $K \subset H$ a closed real subspace of $H$ such that $K \cap i K=(0)$ and $K+i K$ is dense in $H$. For $\xi \in H$ let $a(\xi)$ denote exterior multiplication by $\xi$ and let $c(\xi)=a(\xi)+a(\xi)^{*}$ denote Clifford multiplication. Thus $c(\xi) c(\eta)+c(\eta) c(\xi)=2 \operatorname{Re}(\xi, \eta)$. Since the $*$-algebra generated by the $a(\xi)$ 's acts irreducibly on $\Lambda H$ and since $a(\xi)=(c(\xi)-i c(i \xi)) / 2$, the $c(\xi)$ ' s act irreducibly on $\Lambda H$.

Lemma. If $M(K)$ is the von Neumann algebra generated by the $c(\xi)$ 's $(\xi \in K)$, then $\Omega$ is cyclic for $M(K)$.

Proof. Let $H_{0}=\overline{M(K) \Omega}$ and assume by induction that all forms of degree $N$ or less lie in $H_{0}$. Let $\omega$ be an $N$-form and take $f \in K$. Then $f \wedge \omega=c(f) \omega-a(f)^{*} \omega$, so that $f \wedge \omega \in H_{0}$. Since $K+i K$ is dense in $H$ and $H_{0}$ is a complex subspace of $\Lambda H$, it follows that $\xi \wedge \omega \in H_{0}$ for all $\xi \in H$. Hence $H_{0}$ contains all $(N+1)$-forms.

Since $\Omega$ is cyclic for $M\left(K^{\perp}\right)$, which lies in the graded commutant of $M(K)$, it follows that $\Omega$ is cyclic and separating for $M(K)$. Let $R, T$, $\Delta^{i t}=(I-R)^{i t} R^{-i t}$ and $J$ be the corresponding modular operators for $M(K)$ and $\Omega$.

Theorem. (i) $J=\tilde{\Lambda}(j)=\kappa^{-1} \Lambda(i j), \Delta^{i t}=\Lambda\left(\delta^{i t}\right)$, where $j$ and $\delta^{i t}$ are the modular operators for $K$.
(ii) For $\xi \in H, \Delta^{i t} c(\xi) \Delta^{-i t}=c\left(\delta^{i t} \xi\right)$ and $\kappa J c(\xi) J \kappa^{-1}=c(i j \xi)$, where $\kappa$ is the Klein transformation.
(iii) $M\left(K^{\perp}\right)$ is the graded commutant of $M(K)$ and $M(K)^{\prime}=J M(K) J$ (Araki duality).

Remark. For another proof, analogous to that of [24] for bosons and the canonical commutation relations, see [42].

Proof (cf [2]). Let $\delta^{i t}$ and $j$ be the modular operators associated with the closed real subspace $K \subset H$. Let $S$ be the conjugate-linear operator on $\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}_{\mathbb{R}}(K)\right) \Omega$ defined by $S a \Omega=a^{*} \Omega$ for $a \in M=\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}_{\mathbb{R}}(K)\right)$. This is well-defined, because $\Omega$ is separating for $M$. Thus $\operatorname{Sc}\left(\xi_{1}\right) \cdots c\left(\xi_{n}\right) \Omega=$ $c\left(\xi_{n}\right) \cdots c\left(\xi_{1}\right) \Omega$ for $\xi_{i} \in K$. If the $\xi_{i}$ 's are orthogonal, it follows that $S \xi_{1} \wedge \cdots$ $\wedge \xi_{n}=\xi_{n} \wedge \cdots \wedge \xi_{1}$. Since any finite dimensional subspace of $K$ admits an
orthonormal basis, this formula holds by linearity for arbitrary $\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{n} \in K$. Since $S$ is conjugate-linear, it follows that for $\xi_{i}, \eta_{i} \in K$ we have $S\left(\xi_{1}+\underset{\sim}{i} \eta_{1}\right) \wedge \cdots \wedge\left(\xi_{n}+i \eta_{n}\right)=\left(\xi_{n}-i \eta_{n}\right) \wedge \cdots \wedge\left(\xi_{1}-i \eta_{1}\right)$.

Let $J=\tilde{\Lambda}(j)=\kappa^{-1} \Lambda(i j)$ and $\Delta^{i t}=\Lambda\left(\delta^{i t}\right)$. Clearly $\Delta^{i t} J=\Delta^{i t} J$ and $\Delta^{i t}$ preserves $\overline{M_{\mathrm{sa}} \Omega}$. To check the KMS condition, it suffices to show that for $x \in M \Omega$, the function $F(t)=\Delta^{i t} x$ extends to a bounded continuous function on $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic on the interior, with $F(t-i / 2)=\operatorname{JSF}(t)$. We may assume that $x=\left(\xi_{1}+i \eta_{1}\right) \wedge \cdots \wedge\left(\xi_{n}+i \eta_{n}\right)$ with $\xi_{i}, \eta_{i} \in K$. For each $i$, let $f_{i}(z)$ be continuous bounded function on $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic in the interior, $f_{i}(t)=\delta^{i t}\left(\xi_{i}+i \eta_{i}\right)$ and $f_{i}(t-i / 2)=j \delta^{i t}\left(\xi_{i}-i \eta_{i}\right)$. Let $F(z)=f_{1}(z) \wedge \cdots \wedge f_{n}(z)$. Then $F(z)$ is bounded and continuous on $-\frac{1}{2} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic in the interior, and $F(t)=\Delta^{i t} x$. Now $F(t-i / 2)=f_{1}(t-i / 2) \wedge \cdots \wedge f_{n}(t-i / 2)=j \delta^{i t}\left(\xi_{1}-i \eta_{1}\right) \wedge \cdots \wedge j \delta^{i t} \quad\left(\xi_{n}-\right.$ $\left.i \eta_{n}\right)=\tilde{\Lambda}(j) S F(t)=J S F(t)$. Thus $F(t-i / 2)=J S F(t)$ as required. This proves (i) and (ii) follows immediately. To prove (iii), note that $i j(K)=K^{\perp}$, so that $M\left(K^{\perp}\right)=\kappa J M(K) J \kappa^{-1}$ by this covariance relation. But $M\left(K^{\perp}\right) \subseteq M(K)^{q}=\kappa M(K)^{\prime} \kappa^{-1}$. Thus $J M(K) J \subseteq M(K)^{\prime}$, so the result follows from Lemma 2 in Section 12.

## 14. Prequantised geometric modular theory

In this section we compute the prequantised modular operators corresponding to fermions on the circle by two methods: firstly using a KMS argument due to Jones reminiscent of computations of Bisognano and Wichmann [4]; and then using the fact that a Hilbert space, endowed with two projections in general position, can be written as a direct integral of two-dimensional irreducible components. Let $H$ be the complex Hilbert space $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ where $V=\mathbb{C}^{N}$. We give $H$ a new complex structure by defining multiplication by $i$ as $i(2 P-I)$, where $P$ is the orthogonal projection onto Hardy space $H^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$. Let $I$ be the upper semicircle and let $K=L^{2}(I, V)$, a real closed subspace of $H_{P}$. The real orthogonal projection onto $K$, regarding $H$ as a real inner product space, is given by $Q$, multiplication by $\chi_{I}$.

Theorem. (a) $K \cap i K=(0)$ and $K+i K$ is dense in $H_{P}$.
(b) $K^{\perp}=L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V\right)$.
(c) $j=-i(2 P-I)$ where $\operatorname{Ff}(z)=z^{-1} f\left(z^{-1}\right)$ is the flip, and $\delta^{i t}=u_{t}$, where $\left(u_{t} f\right)(z)=(z \sinh \pi t+\cosh \pi t)^{-1} f(z \cosh \pi t+\sinh \pi t / z \sinh \pi t+\cosh \pi t)$.

First proof. (a) It suffices to show that $P$ and $Q$ are in general position. Now conjugation by $r_{\pi}$ takes $Q$ onto $I-Q$ and fixes $P$ while conjugation by the flip $V f(z)=z^{-1} f\left(z^{-1}\right)$ takes $Q$ onto $I-Q$ and $P$ onto $I-P$. Thus it will suffice to show that $P H \cap Q H=(0)$. Suppose that the negative Fourier coefficients of $f \in L^{2}(I, V)$ all vanish. Then so do those of $\psi \star f$ for any $\psi \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}\right)$. But $\psi \star f \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function. If $\psi$ is supported near $1, \psi \star f$ vanishes in a subinterval of $I^{c}$ and
therefore must vanish identically (since $\psi \star f$ can be extended by reflection across this subinterval). Since $\psi \star f$ and $f$ can be made arbitrarily close in $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$, we must have $f=0$.
(b) The real orthogonal complement of $L^{2}(I, V)$ in $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ is clearly $L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V\right)$.
(c) Let $K_{1} \subset K$ be the dense subset of $Q H$ consisting of functions $Q p$ where $p$ is the restriction of a polynomial in $e^{i \theta}$. We must show that the map $f(t)=u_{t} Q p$ extends to a bounded continuous function $f(z)$ on the closed strip $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$, holomorphic in the open strip with $f(t-i / 2)=j f(t)$ for $t \in \mathbb{R}$. Now $f(t)=P u_{t} Q p+(I-P) u_{t} Q p$. Because of the modified complex structure on $H=P H \oplus(I-P) H$, we have to extend $f_{1}(t)=P u_{t} Q p$ to a holomorphic function with values in $P H$ and $(I-P) u_{t} Q p$ to an antiholomorphic function with values in $(I-P) H$. Note that if $\theta \in[0, \pi]$ and $-3 / 4<\operatorname{Im} z<1 / 2$, the function $s_{z} e^{i \theta}+c_{z}$ is non-zero, where $s_{z}=\sinh \pi z$ and $c_{z}=\cosh \pi z$. For $-3 / 4<\operatorname{Im} z<1 / 2$, let $p_{z}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=$ $\left(s_{z} e^{i \theta}+c_{z}\right)^{-1} p\left(c_{z} e^{i \theta}+s_{z} / s_{z} e^{i \theta}+c_{z}\right)$. Then $Q p_{z}$ is holomorphic for such $z$, so $f_{1}(z)=P Q p_{z}$ gives a holomorphic extension of $f_{1}$ to $-3 / 4<\operatorname{Im} z<1 / 2$. Next note that $f_{2}(t)=-(I-P) u_{t}(I-Q) p$, since $(I-P) p=0$. Set $f_{2}(z)=-(I-P)(I-Q) p_{z}$. This gives an antiholomorphic extension of $f_{2}$ to $-3 / 4<\operatorname{Im} z<1 / 4$, because $s_{\bar{z}} e^{i \theta}+c_{\bar{z}}$ does not vanish for $\theta \in[-\pi, 0]$. Thus $f(z)=f_{1}(z)+f_{2}(z)$ is a holomorphic function from $-3 / 4<\operatorname{Im} z<1 / 2$ into $H$. It equals $f(t)$ for $t \in \mathbb{R}$. If we show that $f(t-i / 2)=j f(t)$, then $f(z)$ will be bounded for $\operatorname{Im} z=0$ or $-1 / 2$ and hence, by the maximum modulus principle, on the strip $-1 / 2 \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq 0$. Now $j f(t)=-i(2 P-I)$ $F f(t)=-i P Q F p_{t}+i(I-P)(I-Q) F p_{t}$. Since $s_{t \pm i / 2}= \pm i c_{t}$ and $c_{t \pm i / 2}= \pm i s_{t}$, we have $p_{t \pm i / 2}=\mp i F p_{t}$. Hence $f_{1}(t-i / 2)=-i P Q F p_{t}$ and $f_{2}(t-i / 2)=$ $i(I-P)(I-Q) F p_{t}$, so that $f(t-i / 2)=j f(t)$ as required.

Second proof. Let $U: L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right) \rightarrow L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V), U f(x)=(x-i)^{-1} f(x+i / x-i)$ be the unitary induced by the Cayley transform. Let $V: L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V) \rightarrow$ $L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V) \oplus L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V)$ be the unitary defined by $V f=\left(\widehat{f_{+}}, \widehat{f_{-}}\right)$, where $\widehat{g}$ denotes the Fourier transform of $g$ and $f_{ \pm}(t)=e^{t / 2} f\left( \pm e^{t}\right)$. Let $W=V U$ : $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right) \rightarrow L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V) \oplus L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V)$. If $e_{n}(\theta)=e^{i n \theta}$, it is easy to check that $W e_{0}=\left(g_{+}, g_{-}\right)$and $W e_{-1}=\left(-g_{-},-g_{+}\right)$where $g_{ \pm}(x)=\pi^{\frac{1}{2}}(i \pm 1) e^{ \pm \pi x / 2}$ $\left(1+e^{ \pm 2 \pi x}\right)^{-1}$.

Clearly $W Q W^{*}$ is the projection onto the first summand $L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, V)$. Now $U u_{t} U^{*}=v_{2 \pi t}$, where $\left(v_{s} f\right)(x)=e^{s / 2} f\left(e^{s} x\right) ; \quad$ and $\quad V v_{s} V^{*}=m\left(e_{s}\right)$, where $e_{s}(t)=e^{i s t}$ and $m\left(e_{s}\right)$ is the corresponding multiplication operator (acting diagonally). Hence $W u_{t} W^{*}=m\left(e_{2 \pi t}\right)$. These operators generate a copy of $L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ on $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$, which by the corollary to Lemma 2 in section 12 equals its own commutant on $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$. On the other hand $P$ commutes with $u_{t}$ and End $V$, so that $W P W^{*}$ lies in the commutant of the $m\left(e_{2 \pi t}\right)$ 's and End $V$. Hence $W P W^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}m(a) & m(b) \\ m(c) & m(d)\end{array}\right)$ with $a, b, c, d \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$. But $P e_{0}=e_{0}$ and $P e_{-1}=0$. Transporting these equations by $W$, we get equations for $a, b, c, d$
which can be solved to yield $a(x)=\left(1+e^{2 \pi x}\right)^{-1}, \quad b(x)=-c(x)=$ $i e^{\pi x}\left(1+e^{2 \pi x}\right)^{-1}$ and $d(x)=e^{2 \pi x}\left(1+e^{2 \pi x}\right)^{-1}$.

These formulas show that $W Q W^{*}$ and $W P W^{*}$ are in general position, so (a) follows. (b) is clear, since $L^{2}(I, V)^{\perp}=L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V\right)$. To prove (c), note that $e=Q$ and $f=(2 P-I) Q(2 P-I)$, so that $r=P Q P \oplus P^{\perp} Q P^{\perp}$ and $I-r=P Q^{\perp} P \oplus P^{\perp} Q P^{\perp}$. Remembering that $r^{i t}$ and $(I-r)^{i t}$ must be defined using the complex structure $i(2 P-I)$, we get $(I-r)^{i t} r^{-i t}=(I-A)^{i t} A^{-i t}$, where $A=P Q P \oplus P^{\perp} Q^{\perp} P^{\perp}=Q P Q \oplus Q^{\perp} P^{\perp} Q^{\perp}$. Hence $W A W^{*}=m(a)$ and $W \delta^{i t} W^{*}=m\left((1-a)^{i t} a^{-i t}\right)=m\left(e_{2 \pi t}\right)=W u_{t} W^{*}$, so that $\delta^{i t}=u_{t}$. Finally $t=$ $(e-f) / 2=(2 P-I)(Q P-P Q)$. Now $W(Q P-P Q) W^{*}=W\left(Q P Q^{\perp}-Q^{\perp} P Q\right)$ $W^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & m(b) \\ m(b) & 0\end{array}\right)$ so that $j=-i(2 P-I) F_{1}$ where $W F_{1} W^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & -I \\ -I & 0\end{array}\right)$. Now $U F U^{*}=F^{\prime}$, where $\left(F^{\prime} f\right)(x)=-f(-x)$, so that $W F W^{*}=V F^{\prime} V^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & -I \\ -I & 0\end{array}\right)$. Hence $F_{1}=F$, as required.

## 15. Haag-Araki duality and geometric modular theory

 for fermions on the circleLet $H=L^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$ with $V=\mathbb{C}^{N}$ and let $P$ be the orthogonal projection onto the Hardy space $H^{2}\left(S^{1}\right) \otimes V$. Let $\pi_{P}$ denote the corresponding irreducible representation of $\operatorname{Cliff}(H)$ on fermionic Fock space $\mathscr{F}_{V}$. For any interval $J \subset S^{1}$, let $M(J) \subset B\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$ be the von Neumann algebra generated by the operators $\pi_{P}(a(f))$ with $f \in L^{2}(J, V)$. Our main result was obtained jointly with Jones [19, 42]; it follows almost immediately from the previous sections.

Theorem. Let I denote the upper semicircle with complement $I^{c}=S^{1} \backslash \bar{I}$.
(a) The vacuum vector $\Omega$ is cyclic and separating for $M(I)$.
(b) (Haag-Araki duality) $M\left(I^{c}\right)$ is the graded commutant of $M(I)$ and $J M(I) J=M(I)^{\prime}$, where $J$ is the modular conjugation with respect to $\Omega$.
(c) (Geometric modular group) Let $I \subset S^{1}$ be the upper semi-circle. The modular group $\Delta^{i t}$ of $M(I)$ with respect to the vacuum vector $\Omega$ is implemented by $u_{t}$, where $\left(u_{t} f\right)(z)=(z \sinh \pi t+\cosh \pi t)^{-1} f(z \cosh \pi t+\sinh \pi t / z \sinh \pi t+$ $\cosh \pi t)$ is the Möbius flow fixing the endpoints of $I$. In particular $\Delta^{i t} \pi_{P}$ $(a(f)) \Delta^{-i t}=\pi_{P}\left(a\left(u_{t} f\right)\right)$ for $f \in H$.
(d) (Geometric modular conjugation) If $\kappa$ is the Klein transformation, then the antiunitary $\kappa J$ is implemented by $F$, where $F f(z)=z^{-1} f\left(z^{-1}\right)$ is the flip. In particular $J \pi_{P}(a(f)) J=\kappa^{-1} \pi_{P}(a(F f)) \kappa$ for $f \in H$.

Remark. Analogous results hold when $I$ is replaced by an arbitrary interval $J$. This follows immediately by transport of structure using the canonically quantised action of $S U(1,1)$.

Proof. If $H_{P}=P H \oplus \overline{P^{\perp} H}$ ( $H$ with multiplication by $i$ given by $i(2 P-I)$ ), then $\mathscr{F}_{V}=\Lambda H_{P}$ and $\pi_{p}(a(f))=a(P f)+a\left(\overline{P^{\perp} f}\right)^{*}$ on $\Lambda H_{P}$ for $f \in H$. Hence $\pi_{P}\left(a(f)+a(f)^{*}\right)=c(P f)+c\left(\overline{P^{\perp} f}\right)=c(f)$ for $f \in H$. Now $M(I)$ coincides with the von Neumann algebra generated by $\pi_{P}\left(a(f)+a(f)^{*}\right)$ for
$f \in L^{2}(I, V)$. It therefore may be identified with the von Neumann algebra generated by the $c(f)$ with $f \in K=L^{2}(I, V)$, a closed real subspace of $H_{P}$. From Section 13, the vacuum vector $\Omega$ is cyclic for $M(I)$ and $J M(I) J=M(I)^{\prime}=\kappa^{-1} M\left(I^{c}\right) \kappa$, since $L^{2}(I, V)^{\perp}=L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V\right)$. From Section 14, we see that $\Delta^{i t}$ is the canonical quantisation of $u_{t}$ and the antiunitary $\kappa J$ is the canonical quantisation of $F$. Finally the relations $\Delta^{i t} c(f) \Delta^{-i t}=c\left(u_{t} f\right)$ and $\kappa J c(f) J \kappa^{-1}=c(F f)$ for $f \in H_{P}$ immediately imply that $\Delta^{i t} \pi_{P}(a(f))$ $\Delta^{-i t}=\pi_{P}\left(a\left(u_{t} f\right)\right)$ and $J \pi_{P}(a(f)) J=\kappa^{-1} \pi_{P}(a(F f)) \kappa$ for $f \in H$.

## 16. Ergodicity of the modular group

Proposition. The action $\Lambda\left(u_{t}\right)^{\otimes k}$ of $\mathbb{R}$ on $\left(\Lambda H_{P}\right)^{\otimes k}$ is ergodic, i.e. has no fixed vectors apart from multiples of the vacuum vector $\Omega^{\otimes k}$.

Proof. First note that the action $u_{t}$ of $\mathbb{R}$ on $L^{2}(\mathbb{T})$ is unitarily equivalent to the direct sum of two copies of the left regular representation. In fact the unitary equivalence between $L^{2}(\mathbb{T})$ and $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ induced by the Cayley transform $U f(x)=(x-i)^{-1} f(x+i / x-i)$ carries $u_{t}$ onto the scaling action $v_{2 \pi t}$ of $\mathbb{R}$ on $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$, where $\left(v_{s} f\right)(x)=e^{s / 2} f\left(e^{s} x\right)$. For $f \in L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ define $f_{ \pm} \in L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ by $f_{ \pm}(t)=e^{t / 2} f\left( \pm e^{t}\right)$ and set $W(f)=\left(f_{+}, f_{-}\right)$. Thus $W$ is an unitary between $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ and $L^{2}(\mathbb{R}) \oplus L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$. This unitary carries the scaling action of $\mathbb{R}$ onto the direct sum of two copies of the regular representation.

Thus $L^{2}(\mathbb{T}) \cong L^{2}(\mathbb{R}) \oplus L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ as a representation of $\mathbb{R}$. Now $H=L^{2}(\mathbb{T}, V)$ is a direct sum of copies of $L^{2}(\mathbb{T})$. On the other hand $\overline{L^{2}(\mathbb{R})} \cong L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ (by conjugation), it follows that both $H$ and $\bar{H}$ are subrepresentations of a direct sum of copies of $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$. But $H_{P}=P H \oplus(I-P) H$ is a subrepresentation of $H \oplus \bar{H}$, so that $H_{P}$ is unitarily equivalent to a subrepresentation of $L^{2}(\mathbb{R}) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{n}$ for some $n$.

Thus the action of $\mathbb{R}$ on $\left(\Lambda H_{P}\right)^{\otimes k}=\Lambda\left(H_{P} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{k}\right)$ is unitarily equivalent to a subrepresentation of $\mathbb{R}$ on $\Lambda H_{1}$, where $H_{1}=L^{2}(\mathbb{R}) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{m}$ for some $m \geq 2$. It therefore suffices to check that $\mathbb{R}$ has no fixed vectors in $\lambda^{k} H_{1}$ for $k \geq 1$, since the action of $\mathbb{R}$ preserves degree.

Now $\lambda^{k} H_{1} \subset H_{1}^{\otimes k}$. On the other hand if $t \mapsto \pi(t)$ is any unitary representation of $\mathbb{R}$ on $H$ and $\lambda(t)$ is the left regular representation on $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$, then $\lambda \otimes \pi$ and $\lambda \otimes I$ are unitarily equivalent: the unitary $V$, defined by $V f(x)=\pi(x) f(x)$ for $f \in L^{2}(\mathbb{R}, H)=L^{2}(\mathbb{R}) \otimes H$, gives an intertwiner. It follows that $H_{1}^{\otimes k}$ is unitarily equivalent to a direct sum of copies of the left regular representation. Hence $\lambda^{k} H_{1}$ is unitarily equivalent to a subrepresentation of a direct sum of copies of the left regular representation. Since the Fourier transform on $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ transforms $\lambda(t)$ into multiplication by $e_{t}(x)=e^{i t x}$, no non-zero vectors in $L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ are fixed by $\lambda$. Hence there are no non-zero vectors in $\lambda^{k} H_{1}$ fixed by $\mathbb{R}$ for $k \geq 1$, as claimed.

Corollary. The modular group acts ergodically on the local algebra $M(I)=\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, V)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime}$, i.e. it fixes only the scalar operators. In particular $M(I)$ must be a factor [in fact a type $\mathrm{III}_{1}$ factor].

Proof. Suppose that $x \in M(I)$ is fixed by the modular group. Then $x \Omega$ is fixed by the modular group, so that $x \Omega=\lambda \Omega$ for $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. Since $\Omega$ is separating for $M(I)$, this forces $x=\lambda I$. Since the modular group fixes the centre, $M(I)$ must be a factor.

## 17. Consequences of modular theory for local loop groups

Using only Haag-Araki duality for fermions and Takesaki devissage, we establish several important properties of the von Neumann algebras generated by local loop groups in positive energy representations. These include Haag duality in the vacuum representation, local equivalence, the fact that local algebras are factors and a crucial irreducibility property for local loop groups. This irreducibility result will be deduced from a von Neumann density result, itself a consequence of a generalisation of Haag duality; it can also be deduced from a careful study of the topology on the loop group induced by its positive energy representations.

Let $L_{I} G$ be the local loop group consisting of loops concentrated in $I$, i.e. loops equal to 1 off $I$, and let $\mathscr{L}_{I} G$ be the corresponding subgroup of $\mathscr{L} G$. We need to know in what sense these subgroups generate $L G$.

Covering lemma. If $S^{1}=\bigcup_{k=1}^{n} I_{k}$, then $L G$ is generated by the subgroups $L_{I_{k}} G$.
Proof. By the exponential lemma we just have to prove that every exponential $\exp (X)$ lies in the group generated by $L_{I_{k}} G$. Let $\left(\psi_{k}\right) \subset C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}\right)$ be a smooth partition of the identity subordinate to $\left(I_{k}\right)$. Then $X=\sum \psi_{k} \cdot X$, so that $\exp (X)=\exp \left(\psi_{1} \cdot X\right) \cdots \exp \left(\psi_{n} \cdot X\right)$ with $\exp \left(\psi_{k} \cdot X\right) \in L_{I_{k}} G$.

Let $\pi: \operatorname{LSU}(N) \rightarrow P U\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$ be the basic representation of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$, so that $\pi(g) \pi_{P}(a(f)) \pi(g)^{*}=\pi_{P}(a(g \cdot f))$ for $f \in L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ and $g \in \operatorname{LSU}(N)$. Let $\pi_{i}$ be an irreducible positive energy representation of level $\ell$. Haag-Araki duality and the fermionic construction of $\pi_{i}$ imply that operators in $\pi_{i}\left(L_{I} G\right)$ and $\pi_{i}\left(L_{I^{c}} G\right)$, defined up to a phase, actually commute ("locality"):

Proposition (locality). For any positive energy representation $\pi_{i}$, we have $\pi_{i}(g) \pi_{i}(h) \pi_{i}(g)^{*} \pi_{i}(h)^{*}=I$ for $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} S U(N)$ and $h \in \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} S U(N)$.

Proof. As above let $M(I) \subset B\left(\mathscr{F}_{V}\right)$ be the von Neumann algebra generated by fermions $a(f)$ with $f \in L^{2}(I, V)$. Since $\pi(g)$ commutes with $M\left(I^{c}\right)$ and is even, it must lie in $M(I)$ by Haag-Araki duality. Similarly $\pi(h)$ lies in $M(I)$. Since they are both even operators they must therefore commute. Clearly this result holds also with $\pi^{\otimes \ell}$ in place of $\pi$ and passes to any subrepresentation $\pi_{i}$ of $\pi^{\otimes \ell}$.

The embedding of $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ in $\operatorname{LSU}(N \ell)$ gives a projective representation $\Pi$ on $\mathscr{F}_{W}$ where $W=\left(\mathbb{C}^{N}\right)^{\otimes \ell}$. Now $\mathscr{F}_{W}$ is can naturally be identified with $\mathscr{F}_{V}^{\otimes \ell}$ and under this identification $\Pi=\pi^{\otimes \ell}$. Let $M=\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime}$ and let $N=\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} S U(N)\right)^{\prime \prime}=\Pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} S U(N)\right)^{\prime \prime}$, so that $N \subset M$. The opera-
tors $u_{t}$ and $F$ lie in $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$ so are compatible with the central extension $\mathscr{L} G$ introduced in section 5. It follows immediately that $N$ is invariant under the modular group of $M$. In order to identify $\overline{N \Omega}$ we need a preliminary result.

Reeh-Schlieder theorem. Let $\pi$ be an irreducible positive energy projective representation of $L G$ on Hand let v be a finite energy vector (i.e. an eigenvector for rotations). Then the linear span of $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right) v$ is dense in $H$.

Proof (cf [32]). It suffices to show that if $\eta \in H$ satisfies $(\pi(g) v, \eta)=0$ for all $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$, then $\eta=0$. We start by using the positive energy condition to show that this identity holds for all $g \in L G$. For $z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n} \in \mathbb{T}$ and $g_{1}, \ldots, g_{n} \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, where $J \subset \subset I$, consider $F\left(z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n}\right)=\left(R_{z_{1}} \pi\left(g_{1}\right) R_{z_{2}} \pi\left(g_{2}\right)\right.$ $\left.\cdots R_{z_{n}} \pi\left(g_{n}\right) v, \eta\right)$. This vanishes if all the $z_{i}$ 's are sufficiently close to 1 . Now freeze $z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n-1}$. As a function of $z_{n}$, the positive energy condition implies that the function $F$ extends to a continuous function on the closed unit disc, holomorphic in the interior and vanishing on the unit circle near 1. By the Schwarz reflection principle, $F$ must vanish identically in $z_{n}$. Now freeze all values of $z_{i}$ except $z_{n-1}$. The same argument shows that $F$ vanishes for all values of $z_{n-1}$, and so on. After $n$ steps, we see that $F$ vanishes for all values of $z_{i}$ on the unit circle. Thus $(\pi(g) v, \eta)=0$ for all $g$ in the group generated by $\mathscr{L}_{J} G$ and its rotations, i.e. the whole group $\mathscr{L} G$. Therefore, since $\pi$ is irreducible, $\eta=0$ as required.

We may now apply Takesaki devissage with the following consequences.
Theorem A (factoriality). $N=\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$, and hence each isomorphic $\pi_{i}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$, is a factor.

Proof. By Takesaki devissage, $N$ has ergodic modular group and therefore must be a factor. If $p_{i}$ is a projection in $\pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime} \subset \pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime}$ corresponding to the irreducible positive energy representation $H_{i}$, then $\pi_{i}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is isomorphic to $\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} p_{i} \cong N$ and is therefore also a factor.

Theorem B (local equivalence). For every positive energy representation $\pi_{i}$ of level $\ell$, there is a unique ${ }^{*}$-isomorphism $\pi_{i}: \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \pi_{i}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ sending $\pi_{0}(g)$ to $\pi_{i}(g)$ for all $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$. If $\mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, H_{i}\right)$, then $\mathscr{X} \Omega$ is dense in $H_{i}$ and $\pi_{i}(a) T=$ Ta for all $T \in \mathscr{X}$ and $a \in \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. If $\mathscr{X}_{0}$ is a subspace of $\mathscr{X}$ with $\mathscr{X}_{0} H_{0}$ dense in $H_{i}$, then $\pi_{i}(a)$ is the unique operator $b \in B\left(H_{i}\right)$ such $b T=$ Ta for all $T \in \mathscr{X}_{0}$.

Proof. This is immediate from the proposition in Section 10, since $\pi_{0}$ and $\pi_{i}$ are subrepresentations of the factor representation $\pi^{\otimes \ell} \otimes I$. Since $\mathscr{X}=\mathscr{X} \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)$ and $\Omega$ is cyclic for $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)$, it follows that $\overline{\mathscr{X}}=\overline{\mathscr{X}} H_{0}=H_{i}$.

Remarks. Note that, if $p_{i}, p_{j}$ are projections onto copies of $H_{i}, H_{j}$ in $\mathscr{F}_{W}$, explicit intertwiners $H_{j} \rightarrow H_{i}$ are given by compressed fermi fields $p_{i} a(f) p_{j}$ with $f$ supported in $I^{c}$; these are essentially the smeared vector primary
fields that we study in Chapter IV. Theorem B is a weaker version of the much stronger result that the restrictions of $\pi_{0}$ and $\pi_{i}$ to $\mathscr{L}_{I} G$ are unitarily equivalent. This follows because $\pi^{\otimes \ell}$ restricts to a type III factor representation of $\mathscr{L}_{I} G$ (because the modular group is ergodic). Thus any non-zero subrepresentations are unitarily equivalent. Local equivalence may also be proved more directly using an argument of Borchers [6] to show that the local algebras are "properly infinite" instead of type III (see [42] and [43]).

Theorem C (Haag duality). If $\pi_{0}$ is the vacuum representation at level $\ell$, then $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}$. The corresponding modular operators are geometric. Analogous results hold when I is replaced by an arbitrary interval.

Remark. Locality leads immediately to the canonical so-called "JonesWassermann" inclusion $\pi_{i}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \subseteq \pi_{i}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}$ [19, 41]. This inclusion measures the failure of Haag duality in non-vacuum representations.

Proof. By the Reeh-Schlieder theorem, the vacuum vector is cyclic for $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$, and hence $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime}$ (since it contains $\left.\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Let $e$ be the projection onto $\overline{N \Omega}$. Then $N \rightarrow N e, x \mapsto x e$ is an isomorphism. Clearly $N e$ may be identified with $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Its commutant is $J N J e$, so $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. The identification of the modular operators is immediate. Now $S U(1,1)=S U_{+}(1,1)$ acts on the vacuum representation fixing the vacuum vector and carries $I$ onto any other interval of the circle. Since the modular operators lie in $S U_{ \pm}(1,1)$, the results for an arbitrary interval follow by transport of structure.

Theorem D (generalised Haag duality). Let e be the projection onto the vacuum subrepresentation of $\pi^{\otimes \ell}$. Then $\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime} \cap(\mathbb{C} e)^{\prime}=\pi^{\otimes \ell}$ $\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Moreover $\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is the subalgebra of the "observable algebra" $\pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime \prime}$ commuting with all fields $\pi_{P}(a(f))$ with $f$ localised in $I^{c}$.

Proof. The first assertion is just the second of the Jones relations $N=$ $\{x \in M: e x=x e\}$ and therefore a consequence of Takesaki devissage. To prove the second, note that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \subseteq \pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime} \bigcap \pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime \prime} \subseteq \pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime} \\
\bigcap(\mathbb{C} e)^{\prime}=\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Thus we obtain $\quad \pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime} \cap \pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime \prime}$. But $\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime \prime} \quad$ is equal to the graded commutant of $\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}\left(I^{c}, W\right)\right)\right)$. Since all operators in $\pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime \prime}$ are even, it follows that $\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}\left(I^{c}, W\right)\right)\right)^{\prime} \bigcap \pi^{\otimes \ell}(L G)^{\prime \prime}=\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$, as required.

Theorem E (von Neumann density). Let $I_{1}$ and $I_{2}$ be touching intervals obtained by removing a point from the proper interval I. Then if $\pi$ is a positive
energy representation of $L G$ (not necessarily irreducible), we have $\left.\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \vee \pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{2}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)\right)^{\prime \prime}$ ("irrelevance of points").

Proof. By local equivalence, there is an isomorphism $\pi$ between $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ and $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ taking $\pi_{0}(g)$ onto $\pi(g)$ for $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$. Thus $\pi$ carries $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \vee \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{2}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$ onto $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \vee \pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{2}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. It therefore suffices to prove the result for the vacuum representation $\pi_{0}$. Let $J_{1}=I_{1}^{c}$ and $J_{2}=I_{2}^{c}$. Now for $k=1,2$ we have $\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{k}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}\left(I_{k}, W\right)\right)\right)^{\prime}$ $\cap(\mathbb{C} e)^{\prime}$. So

$$
\begin{aligned}
\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \cap \pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{2}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} & =\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}\left(I_{1}, W\right)\right)\right)^{\prime} \cap \pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}\left(I_{2}, W\right)\right)\right)^{\prime} \cap(\mathbb{C} e)^{\prime} \\
& =\pi_{P}\left(\operatorname{Cliff}\left(L^{2}(I, W)\right)\right)^{\prime} \cap(\mathbb{C} e)^{\prime}=\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here we have used Theorem C and the equality $L^{2}(I, W)=L^{2}\left(I_{1}, W\right) \oplus$ $L^{2}\left(I_{2}, W\right)$. Taking commutants, we get $\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{1}} G\right)^{\prime} \vee \pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{2}} G\right)^{\prime}=$ $\pi^{\otimes \ell}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}$. Compressing by $e$, this yields $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{1}} G\right)^{\prime} \vee \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{2}} G\right)^{\prime}=\pi_{0}$ $\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}$. Using Haag duality in the vacuum representation to identify these commutants, we get $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \vee \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{2}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$, as required.

Theorem F (irreducibility). Let $A$ be finite subset of $S^{1}$ and let $L^{A} G$ be the subgroup of $L G$ consisting of loops trivial to all orders at points of $A$. Let $\mathscr{L}^{A} G$ be the corresponding subgroup of $\mathscr{L} G$. If $\pi$ is a positive energy representation of $L G$ (not necessarily irreducible), we have $\pi\left(L^{A} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi(L G)^{\prime \prime}$. In particular the irreducible positive energy representations of LG stay irreducible and inequivalent when restricted to $L^{A} G$.

Proof. Clearly $\mathscr{L}^{A} G=\mathscr{L}_{I_{1}} G \cdots \mathscr{L}_{I_{n}} G$, if $S^{1} \backslash A$ is the disjoint union of the consecutive intervals $I_{1}, \ldots, I_{n}$. Let $J_{k}$ be the interval obtained by adding the common endpoint to $I_{k} \cup I_{k+1}$ (we set $I_{n+1}=I_{1}$ ). By von Neumann density, $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{k}} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \vee \pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{I_{k+1}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{k}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Hence $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}^{A} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\bigvee \pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{J_{k}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. But the subgroups $\mathscr{L}_{J_{k}} G$ generate $\mathscr{L} G$ algebraically. Hence $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}^{A} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=$ $\pi(\mathscr{L} G)^{\prime \prime}$. Taking commutants, we get $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}^{A} G\right)^{\prime}=\pi(\mathscr{L} G)^{\prime}$. By Schur's lemma, this implies that the irreducible positive energy representations of $L G$ stay irreducible and inequivalent when restricted to $L^{A} G$.

Remark. Direct proofs of Haag duality (Theorem C) have been discovered since the announcement in [19] that do not use Takesaki devissage from fermions. Theorems A, B and F can also be proved without using Takesaki devissage. In fact Jones and I proved in [42] that the topology on $\mathscr{L} G$ induced by pulling back the strong operator topology on $U\left(\mathscr{F}_{P}\right)$ makes $\mathscr{L}^{A} G$ dense in $\mathscr{L} G$. Since any level $\ell$ representation $\pi$ is continuous for this topology, it follows that $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}^{A} G\right)$ is dense in $\pi(\mathscr{L} G)$ in the strong operator topology. So $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}^{A} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi(\mathscr{L} G)^{\prime \prime}$ and Theorem F follows. The reader is warned that several incorrect proofs of these results have appeared in published articles.

## III. The basic ordinary differential equation

18. The basic ODE and the transport problem

Consider the ODE

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d f}{d z}=\frac{P f}{z}+\frac{Q f}{1-z} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $f(z)$ takes values in $V=\mathbb{C}^{N}$ and $P, Q \in$ End $V$. Suppose that $P$ has distinct eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ with corresponding eigenvectors $\xi_{i}$, none of which differ by positive integers, and $Q$ is a non-zero multiple of a rank one idempotent in general position with respect to $P$. Thus $Q^{2}=\delta Q, \operatorname{Tr}(Q)=\delta$ with $\delta \neq 0$, so that $Q(x)=\phi(x) v$ for $v \in V, \phi \in V^{*}$ with $\phi(v)=\delta$. "General position" means that $v=\sum \delta_{i} \xi_{i}$ with $\delta_{i} \neq 0$ for all $i$ and $\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right) \neq 0$ for all $i$; the eigenvectors can therefore be normalised so that $\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right)=1$. Let $R=Q-P$ and suppose that $R$ satisfies the same conditions as $P$ with respect to $Q$. Let $\left(\zeta_{j},-\mu_{j}\right)$ be the normalised eigenvectors and eigenvalues of $R$. Let $f_{i}(z)=\sum \xi_{i, n} z^{\lambda_{i}+n}$ be the formal power series solutions of (1) expanded about 0 with $\xi_{i, 0}=\xi_{i}$. The $f_{i}(z)$ 's are defined and converge in $\{z:|z|<1, z \notin[0,1)\}$. If $g(z)=f\left(z^{-1}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d g}{d z}=\frac{R g}{z}+\frac{Q g}{1-z}, \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

so we can look for formal power series solutions $h_{j}(z)=\sum \zeta_{j, z^{z}} z^{\mu_{j}-n}$ of (1) expanded about $\infty$ with $\zeta_{j, 0}=\zeta_{j}$. The $h_{j}(z)$ 's are defined and converge in $\{z:|z|>1, z \notin[1, \infty)\}$. The solutions $f_{i}(z)$ and $h_{j}(z)$ extend analytically to single-valued holomorphic functions on $\mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$.

Problem. Compute the transport coefficients $c_{i j}$ for which $f_{i}(z)=\sum c_{i j} h_{j}(z)$ for $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$.

This problem will be solved by finding a rational canonical form for the matrices $P, Q, R$ which links the ODE with the generalised hypergeometric equation, first studied by Thomae. It can be seen directly that the projected solutions $(1-z) \phi\left(f_{i}(z)\right)$ can be represented by multiple Euler integrals. This allows one coefficient of the transport matrix $\left(c_{i j}\right)$ to be computed when the $\lambda_{i}$ 's and $\mu_{j}$ 's are real and $\delta$ is negative. The rational canonical form shows that the transport matrices are holomorphic functions of the $\lambda_{i}$ 's and $\mu_{j}$ 's alone, symmetric in an obvious sense. So the computation of the $c_{i j}$ 's follows by analytic continuation and symmetry from the particular solution:

Theorem. The coefficients of the transport matrix are given by the formula

$$
c_{i j}=e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{j}\right)} \frac{\prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\lambda_{k}+1\right) \prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\mu_{\ell}\right)}{\prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{\ell}+1\right) \prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{k}\right)} .
$$

For applications it will be convenient to have a slightly generalised version of this result. Let $B$ be a matrix of the form $-\alpha I+\beta Q(\beta \neq 0)$ where $Q$ is a rank one idempotent. Let $A$ be a matrix such that both $A$ and $B-A$ are in general position with respect to $Q$ and have distinct eigenvalues not differing by integers (so distinct). Around 0 the ODE

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d f}{d z}=\frac{A f}{z}+\frac{B f}{1-z} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a canonical basis of solutions $f_{i}(z)=\xi_{i} z^{\lambda_{i}}+\xi_{i, 1} z^{\lambda_{i}+1}+\cdots$, where $A \xi_{i}=\lambda_{i} \xi_{i}$ and $\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right)=1$ if $Q(\xi)=\phi(\xi) v$. Similarly around $\infty$, the ODE has a canonical basis of solutions $h_{j}(z)=\zeta_{i} z^{\mu_{i}}+\zeta_{i, 1} z^{\mu_{i}-1}+\cdots$ where $(A-B) \zeta_{i}=\mu_{i} \zeta_{i}$ and $\phi\left(\zeta_{i}\right)=1$.

Corollary. In $\mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$ we have $f_{i}(z)=\sum c_{i j} h_{j}(z)$, where

$$
c_{i j}=e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{j}\right)} \frac{\prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\lambda_{k}+1\right) \prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\mu_{\ell}\right)}{\prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{\ell}+\alpha+1\right) \prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{k}-\alpha\right)} .
$$

Proof. By a gauge transformation $f(z) \mapsto(1-z)^{\gamma} f(z)$, the ODE (3) is changed into the ODE considered before. It is then trivial to check that the transport relation for that ODE implies the stated transport relation for (3).
19. Analytic transformation of the $O D E$ (cf [17])

Consider the ODE $f^{\prime}(z)=A(t, z) f(z)$ where $A(t, z)=\sum_{n \geq 0} A_{n}(t) z^{n-1}$ with each matrix $A_{n}(t) \in$ End $V$ a polynomial (or holomorphic function) in $t \in W=\mathbb{C}^{m}$ and $A(t, z)$ is convergent in $0<|z|<R$ for all $t \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$.

Proposition. Let $U=\left\{t \in \mathbb{C}^{m}: A_{0}(t)\right.$ has no eigenvalues differing by positive integers $\}$. For $t \in U$, there is a unique gauge transformation $g(t, z) \in G L(V)$, holomorphic on $U \times\{z:|z|<R\}$, such that $g(t, z)^{-1} A(t, z) g(t, z)-$ $g(t, z)^{-1} \partial g(t, z) / \partial z=A_{0}(t) / z$.

Proof. If we write $g(t, z)=\sum_{n \geq 0} g_{n}(t) z^{n}$ with $g_{0}(t)=I$, then the $g_{n}(t)$ 's are given by the recurrence relation

$$
n g_{n}(t)=n\left(n-\operatorname{ad} A_{0}(t)\right)^{-1} \sum_{m=1}^{n} A_{m}(t) g_{n-m}(t) .
$$

Let $\bar{B}$ be a closed ball in $U$. Then $\sup _{n}\left\|n\left(n-\operatorname{ad} A_{0}(t)\right)^{-1}\right\|$ is bounded by $M<\infty$ on $\bar{B}$. So $\left\|g_{n}(t)\right\|$ is bounded on $\bar{B}$ by the solutions $f_{n}$ of the recurrence relation

$$
n f_{n}=\sum_{m=1}^{n} b_{m} f_{n-m}
$$

where $b_{m}=M \sup _{t \in \bar{B}}\left\|A_{m}(t)\right\|$ and $\sum_{m \geq 1} b_{m} z^{m}$ is convergent in $|z|<R$. But then $f(z)=\sum_{n>0} f_{n} z^{n}$ is the formal power series solution of $z f^{\prime}(z)=$ $\left(\sum_{m>1} b_{m} z^{m}\right) f(z) \quad$ with $\quad f(0)=1$, i.e. $\quad f^{\prime}(z)=b(z) f(z) \quad$ where $\quad b(z)=$ $\sum_{m \geq 0} b_{m+1} z^{m}$. This has the unique solution $f(z)=\exp \int_{0}^{z} b(w) d w$ so that in particular $f(z)=\sum f_{n} z^{n}$ is convergent in $|z|<R$. Since $\left\|g_{n}(t)\right\| \leq f_{n}$, it follows that $\sum g_{n}(t) z^{n}$ converges uniformly on $\{(t, z): t \in \bar{B},|z| \leq r\}$ for any $r<R$. Since $t \mapsto g_{n}(t)$ is holomorphic in $t$, for fixed $z, g(z, t)$ is the uniform limit on compacta of holomorphic functions in $t$. Since the uniform limit on compacta of holomorphic functions is holomorphic, it follows that $t \mapsto g(t, z)$ is holomorphic on $U$ for fixed $z$.

To show that $g(t, z)$ is invertible for fixed $t$, note that $\partial_{z} g=A g-g A_{0} / z$. Replacing $A$ by $-A^{t}$, we find $f$ such that $\partial_{z} f=-f A+A_{0} f / z$. Hence $\partial_{z}(f g)=\left[A_{0}, f g\right] / z$. The only formal power series solution $h$ of this equation with $h(0)=I$ is $h \equiv I$. Hence $f g \equiv I$ as required.

Remarks. This argument applies also when $A_{0}(t)=0$. Clearly we may apply the proposition to the basic ODE. The argument with $A_{0}(t)=0$ near points $z \neq 0,1$ shows that the gauge transformation $g(z)$ extends to a holomorphic map $\mathbb{C} \backslash[1, \infty) \rightarrow G L(N, \mathbb{C})$ such that $g(z)^{-1} A(z) g(z)-g(z)^{-1} g^{\prime}(z)=A_{0} / z$ for $z \notin[1, \infty)$. The gauge transformation reduces the basic ODE about 0 to the $\operatorname{ODE} f^{\prime}(z)=z^{-1} A_{0} f(z)$ which has solutions $z^{A_{0}} v=\exp \left(A_{0} \log z\right) v$ defined in $\mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$ say. Applying the gauge transformation, it follows that any formal power series solution of the original ODE is automatically convergent in $|z|<1$ and extends to a single-valued holomorphic function on $\mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$.

## 20. Algebraic transformation of the $O D E$

Let $P$ be a matrix with distinct eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ and corresponding eigenvectors $v_{i}$. Let $Q$ be proportional to a rank one idempotent on $V$ so that $Q(x)=\phi(x) v$ with $\phi \in V^{*}, v \in V$ and $\phi(v)=\delta \neq 0$. We assume that $P$ is in general position with respect to $Q$. This means that the eigenvectors $\xi_{i}$ satisfy $\phi\left(v_{i}\right) \neq 0$ and that $v=\sum \alpha_{i} \xi_{i}$ with $\alpha_{i} \neq 0$ for all $i$. The next result gives a rational canonical form for the matrices $P, Q$ and $R$.

Proposition (Rational Canonical Form). If $P$ has distinct eigenvalues and $Q$ is a non-zero multiple of a rank one idempotent in general position with respect to $P$, there is a (non-orthonormal!) basis of $V$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
P=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
0 & 1 & 0 & & & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & & & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & & 0 \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
0 & & & & & 1 \\
a_{1} & a_{2} & & & a_{N}
\end{array}\right), \quad Q=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & & 0 \\
& & & & & \\
& & & & & \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
b_{1} & b_{2} & & & & b_{N}
\end{array}\right), \\
-R=P-Q=\left(\begin{array}{ccccccc}
0 & 1 & 0 & & & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & & & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & & 0 \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \\
0 & & & & & 1 \\
c_{1} & c_{2} & & & c_{N}
\end{array}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $b_{N}=\operatorname{Tr}(Q) \neq 0$ and $c_{i}=a_{i}-b_{i}$. Conversely if $P$ and $Q$ are of the above form and the roots of $a(t)=t^{N}-\sum a_{i} t^{i-1}$ (the characteristic polynomial of $P$ ) are distinct, then $P$ and $Q$ are in general position iff $b(t)=\sum b_{i} t^{i-1}$ and $a(t)$ have no common roots iff $c(t)=a(t)-b(t)$ and $a(t)$ have no common roots. (Here $c(t)$ is the characteristic polynomial of $P-Q$.)

Remark. This gives a unique canonical form for $P, Q, R=Q-P$ with equivalence given by conjugation by matrices in $G L(N, \mathbb{C})$ : for $a(t)$ and $c(t)$ are the characteristic polynomials of $P$ and $P-Q$, so that the constants $a_{i}, b_{j}$ are invariants (since $b(t)=a(t)-c(t)$ ). Moreover the orbit space of the pairs $(P, R)$ under the action by conjugation of $G L(N, \mathbb{C})$ can naturally be identified with the space of rational canonical forms.

Proof. Let $Q(x)=\phi(x) v$, with $\phi(v) \neq 0$. Since $Q$ and $P$ are in general position, the elements $\phi, \phi \circ P, \cdots, \phi \circ P^{N-1}$ form a basis of $V^{*}$. In particular there is a unique solution $w$ of $\phi(w)=\phi(P w)=\cdots=\phi\left(P^{N-2} w\right)=0$, $\phi\left(P^{N-1} w\right)=1$. The set $w, P w, \ldots, P^{N-1} w$ must be linearly independent, because otherwise $P^{N-1} w$ would have to be a linear combination of $w, P w, \ldots, P^{N-2} w$ contradicting $\phi\left(P^{N-1} w\right)=1$. Thus $\left(P^{j} w\right)$ is a basis of $V$. Clearly $P$ and $Q$ have the stated form with respect to this basis. Furthermore $b_{N}=\operatorname{Tr}(Q)$.

We next must check that if $P$ and $Q$ have the stated form, then no eigenvector $u \neq 0$ of $P$ can satisfy $Q u=0$ and no eigenvector $\psi$ of $P^{t}$ can satisfy $Q^{t} \psi=0$. For $\psi$, the condition $Q^{t} \psi=0$ means that $\psi=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{N-1}, 0\right)$ with $x_{i} \in \mathbb{C}$. The condition $P^{t} \psi=\lambda \psi$ forces $x_{1}=\lambda x_{2}, x_{2}=\lambda x_{3}, \ldots, x_{N-1}=0$. Hence $x_{i}=0$ for all $i$ and $\psi=0$. Now suppose that $P u=\lambda u$ and $Q u=0$. Then it is easily verified that $u$ is
proportional to $\left(1, \lambda, \lambda^{2}, \ldots, \lambda^{N-1}\right)^{t}$. Thus $Q u=(0,0, \ldots, 0, b(\lambda))^{t}$, so that $Q u \neq 0$ iff $b(\lambda) \neq 0$. Finally the characteristic polynomial of $R$ is $c(t)=a(t)-b(t)$. Clearly $a(t)$ and $b(t)$ have no common roots iff $c(t)$ and $b(t)$ have no common roots, so the last assertion follows.

## 21. Symmetry and analyticity properties of transport matrices

Proposition. The transport matrix $c_{i j}$ from 0 to $\infty$ of the basic ODE depends only on the eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ of $P$ and $\mu_{j}$ of $P-Q$. This dependence is holomorphic. Moreover the coefficients $c_{i j}$, indexed by the eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ and $\mu_{j}$, have the symmetry property $c_{i j}\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{N}, \mu_{1}, \ldots, \mu_{N}\right)=c_{\sigma i, \tau j}\left(\lambda_{\sigma 1}, \ldots, \lambda_{\sigma N}\right.$, $\left.\mu_{\tau 1}, \ldots, \mu_{\tau N}\right)$ for $\sigma, \tau \in S_{N}$.

Proof. We can conjugate by a matrix in $G L(N, \mathbb{C})$ so that $P, Q$ and $R$ are in rational canonical form. The transport matrix from 0 to $\infty$ is invariantly defined, so does not change under such a conjugation. Thus the assertions are invariant under conjugation, so it suffices to prove them when $P, Q, R$ are in rational canonical form. Setting $g(z)=f(z /(z-1))$, where $f(z)$ is a solution of the basic ODE, we get the ODE

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d g}{d z}=\frac{P g}{z}+\frac{R g}{z-1} \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R=Q-P$. Thus we have to compute the transport matrices for (4) from 0 to 1 where the solutions at 0 are labelled by the eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ of $P$ and at 1 by the eigenvalues of $\mu_{j}$ of $-R$. We shall consider variations of $P, Q$, and $R$ within rational canonical form. $P$ and $R$ can be specified by prescribing the eigenvalues $\left(\lambda_{i}\right)$ of $P$ and $\left(\mu_{j}\right)$ of $-R$. This completely determines the $a_{i}$ 's and $c_{i}$ 's and hence the $b_{i}$ 's. The $\lambda_{i}$ 's and $\mu_{j}$ 's should be distinct and no two $\lambda_{i}$ 's or $\mu_{j}$ 's should differ by a positive integer. We also impose the linear constraint that $\sum \lambda_{i}-\mu_{i} \neq 0$. Thus we obtain an open path-connected subset $U_{0}$ of the $2 N$-dimensional linear space $W=\{(\lambda, \mu)\}=\mathbb{C}^{2 N}$. Applying the proposition in section 19 with $t=(\lambda, \mu) \in W$ and $A(t, z)=$ $z^{-1} P+(z-1)^{-1} R$, we deduce that the gauge transformations $g(t, z), h(t, z)$ transforming $A(t, z)$ into $z^{-1} P$ and $(z-1)^{-1} R$ respectively depend holomorphically on $t \in U$ for a fixed $z \in(0,1)$. We already saw in section 20 that the normalised eigenvectors of $P$ and $R$ are given by

$$
\xi_{i}(t)=b\left(\lambda_{i}\right)^{-1}\left(1, \lambda_{i}, \lambda_{i}^{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{i}^{N-1}\right)^{t} \quad \zeta_{j}(t)=b\left(\mu_{j}\right)^{-1}\left(1, \mu_{j}, \mu_{j}^{2}, \ldots, \mu_{j}^{N-1}\right)^{t}
$$

Thus the normalised solutions at 0 are $z^{\lambda_{i}} g(t, z) \xi_{i}(t)$ and the normalised solutions at 1 are given by $(z-1)^{\mu_{j}} h(t, z) \zeta_{j}(t)$. So the transport matrix $c_{i j}(t)$ (independent of $z$ ) is specified by the equation

$$
z^{\lambda_{i}} g(t, z) \xi_{i}(t)=\sum c_{i j}(t)(z-1)^{-\mu_{j}} h(t, z) \zeta_{j}(t)
$$

for $|z-1 / 2|<1 / 2$. Fix such a value of $z($ say $z=1 / 2)$ and let $\left(\psi_{j}(t)\right)$ be the dual basis to $\left(\zeta_{j}(t)\right)$. Clearly $\psi_{j}(t)$ is a rational function of $(\lambda, \mu)$ so is holomorphic on $U$. Moreover

$$
c_{i j}(t)=(z-1)^{\mu_{j}} z^{\lambda_{i}}\left(\psi_{j}(t), h(t, z)^{-1} g(t, z) \xi_{i}(t)\right) .
$$

This equation shows that $c_{i j}(t)$ depends holomorphically on $t \in U_{0}$ and has the stated symmetry properties.

## 22. Projected power series solutions

Let $\lambda=\lambda_{i}$ be an eigenvalue of $P$ and consider the corresponding (formal) power series solution $f_{i}(z)=\sum \xi_{i, 2} z^{\lambda_{i}+n}$ of the basic ODE. Dropping the index $i$ for clarity, we have

$$
z f^{\prime}(z)=P f+Q\left(z+z^{2}+z^{3}+\cdots\right) f
$$

with $f(z)=\sum \xi_{n} z^{\lambda+n}$ and $P \xi_{0}=\lambda \xi_{0}$. Substituting in the formal power series and dividing out by $z^{\lambda}$, we get

$$
\sum_{n \geq 0}(n+\lambda) \xi_{n} z^{n}=\sum_{n \geq 0} P \xi_{n} z^{n}+Q\left(z+z^{2}+z^{3}+\cdots\right) \sum_{n \geq 0} \xi_{n} z^{n} .
$$

Thus for $n \geq 1$ we get

$$
(n+\lambda-P) \xi_{n}=Q\left(\xi_{0}+\cdots+\xi_{n-1}\right)
$$

and hence

$$
Q \xi_{n}=Q(n+\lambda-P)^{-1} Q\left(\xi_{0}+\cdots+\xi_{n-1}\right)
$$

Let $Q\left(\xi_{0}+\cdots+\xi_{n}\right)=\alpha_{n} v$, where $\alpha_{n} \in \mathbb{C}$. Thus we obtain the recurrence relation $\alpha_{n}-\alpha_{n-1}=\chi(\lambda+n) \alpha_{n}$, so that $\alpha_{n}=\chi_{P}(\lambda+n) \alpha_{n-1}$, where the rational function $\chi_{P}(t)$ is defined by $Q+Q(t I-P)^{-1} Q=\chi_{P}(t) Q$. Thus, reintroducing the index $i$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{i, n}=\alpha_{i, 0} \prod_{m=1}^{n} \chi_{P}\left(\lambda_{i}+m\right) \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\alpha_{i, 0}=\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right)$. We now must compute $\chi_{P}(t)$. Bearing in mind that equation (2) gives the corresponding power series expansions about $\infty$, we define $\chi_{R}(t)$ by $Q+Q(t I-R)^{-1} Q=\chi_{R}(t) Q$.

Inversion lemma. $\chi_{R}(t)=\chi_{P}(-t)^{-1}$.

Proof. Let $A$ be an invertible matrix with $Q A^{-1} Q=(1-\alpha) Q$, where $\alpha \neq 0$. Expanding $(A-Q)^{-1}=\left(I-A^{-1} Q\right)^{-1} A^{-1}$, we find that $Q(A-Q)^{-1}$ $Q=\left(\alpha^{-1}-1\right) Q$. Hence

$$
\chi_{R}(t) Q=Q+Q(t-R)^{-1} Q=Q+Q(t+P-Q)^{-1} Q=\alpha^{-1} Q,
$$

if $Q(t+P)^{-1} Q=(1-\alpha) Q$. But $Q(t+P)^{-1} Q=-Q(-t-P)^{-1} Q=\left(1-\chi_{P}\right.$ $(-t)) Q$, so that $\alpha=\chi_{P}(-t)$ and hence $\chi_{R}(t)=\alpha^{-1}=\chi_{P}(-t)^{-1}$ as required.

Corollary. $\chi_{p}(t)=\Pi\left(t-\mu_{i}\right) / \Pi\left(t-\lambda_{j}\right)$ where the $\mu_{j}$ 's are the eigenvalues of $P-Q$.

Proof. $X_{P}(t)$ has the form $p(t) / \prod\left(t-\lambda_{i}\right)$, where $p(t)$ is a monic polynomial of degree $N$. Similarly $X_{R}(t)$ has the form $q(t) / \prod\left(t+\mu_{i}\right)$ where the $\mu_{i}$ 's are the eigenvalues of $-R=P-Q$. Since $X_{R}(t)=X_{P}(-t)^{-1}$, we see that $p(t)=\Pi\left(t-\mu_{i}\right)$ and $q(t)=\Pi\left(t+\lambda_{i}\right)$, as required.

Corollary. $\sum \lambda_{i}-\sum \mu_{i}=\delta$.
Proof. This follows by taking the trace of the identity $P+R=Q$.
From (5) and the formula for $\chi_{P}(t)$, we have for $n \geq 1$

$$
\alpha_{i, n}=\alpha_{i, 0} \prod_{j=1}^{N} \prod_{m=1}^{n} \frac{m+\lambda_{i}-\mu_{j}}{m+\lambda_{i}-\lambda_{j}}
$$

where $\alpha_{i, 0}=\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right)$.

## 23. Euler-Thomae integral representation of projected solutions (cf $[38,47])$

We assume here that the eigenvalues $\lambda_{i}$ of $P$ are real with $\lambda_{1}>\lambda_{2}>\cdots>\lambda_{N}$; that the eigenvalues $\mu_{i}$ of $P-Q$ are real with $\mu_{1}>\mu_{2}>\cdots>\mu_{N}$; and that $\lambda_{1}+1>\mu_{j}>\lambda_{1}$ for all $j$. In particular this implies that $\delta=\operatorname{Tr}(Q)$ must be negative. We start by obtaining an integral representation of the projected solutions $(1-z) \phi\left(f_{i}(z)\right)$ around 0 . Recalling that the eigenvectors $\xi_{i}$ and $\zeta_{i}$ of $P$ and $P-Q$ are normalised so that $\phi\left(\xi_{i}\right)=1=\phi\left(\zeta_{i}\right)$, where $Q(x)=\phi(x) v=\phi(x) \eta$, we have already shown that

$$
(1-z)^{-1} z^{-\lambda_{i}} \phi\left(f_{i}(z)\right)=\sum_{n \geq 0} \alpha_{i, n} z^{n}=\sum_{n \geq 0} z^{n} \cdot \prod_{j=1}^{N} \prod_{m=1}^{n} \frac{m+\lambda_{i}-\mu_{j}}{m+\lambda_{i}-\lambda_{j}} .
$$

Using the formula $(a)_{n} \equiv a(a+1) \cdots(a+n-1)=\Gamma(a+n) / \Gamma(a)$, we get

$$
(1-z)^{-1} z^{-\lambda_{i}} \phi\left(f_{1}(z)\right)=\sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{1}+1\right)_{n}}{n!} \prod_{j \neq 1} \frac{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}+n+1\right) \Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\lambda_{j}+1\right)}{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\lambda_{j}+n+1\right)} .
$$

Using the beta function identity $\Gamma(a) \Gamma(b) / \Gamma(a+b)=\int_{0}^{1} t^{a-1}(1-t)^{b-1} d t$ for $a, b>0$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\phi\left(f_{1}(z)\right)= & (1-z) z^{\lambda_{1}} K \int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1} \cdots \int_{0}^{1}\left(1-z t_{2} \cdots t_{N}\right)^{\mu_{1}-\lambda_{1}-1} \\
& \prod_{j \neq 1} t_{j}^{\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}}\left(1-t_{j}\right)^{\mu_{j}-\lambda_{j}-1} d t_{j}, \tag{6}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
K=\prod_{j \neq 1} \frac{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\lambda_{j}+1\right)}{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{j}\right)} .
$$

(The inequalities $\mu_{i}>\lambda_{i}$ and $\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}>-1$ guarantee that this summation by integrals is valid.) Note that this Euler type integral representation is also valid for $z$ real and negative, since it is analytic in $z$ where defined. The solutions about $\infty$ have a Laurent expansion (for $|z|$ large) $g_{j}(z)=\zeta_{j} z^{\mu_{j}}+\zeta_{j, 1} z^{\mu_{j}-1}+\cdots$ where $\zeta_{j}$ are the eigenvectors of $P-Q$ with $(P-Q) \zeta_{j}=\mu_{j} \zeta_{j}$. Hence the projected solution $\phi\left(g_{j}(z)\right)$ satisfies $\phi\left(g_{j}(z)\right) \sim\left(\zeta_{j}, \eta\right) z^{\mu_{j}}$ because of the normalisation $\phi\left(\zeta_{j}\right)=1$. In particular if $x$ is large and negative $\phi\left(g_{j}(x)\right) \sim|x|^{\mu_{j}} e^{\pi i \mu_{j}}$. Let $c_{i j}$ be the transport matrix connecting the solutions at 0 and $\infty$, so that $f_{1}(z)=\sum c_{1 j} g_{j}(z)$. Since $Q$ and $P$ are in general position, we lose no information by writing the above equation as $\phi\left(f_{1}(z)\right)=\sum c_{1 j} \phi\left(g_{j}(z)\right)$. Since $\mu_{1}$ is the largest of the $\mu_{j}$ 's, we find that for $x$ large and negative,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi\left(f_{1}(x)\right) \sim c_{11}|x|^{\mu_{1}} e^{i \pi \mu_{1}} \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand by (6) we have for $x \ll 0$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi\left(f_{1}(x)\right) \sim K e^{i \pi \lambda_{1}}|x|^{\mu_{1}} \prod_{j \neq i} \int_{0}^{1} t_{j}^{\mu_{1}-\mu_{j}-1}\left(1-t_{j}\right)^{\mu_{j}-\lambda_{j}-1} d t_{j} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Comparing (7) and (8), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
c_{11} & =e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{1}\right)} K \prod_{j \neq 1} \int_{0}^{1} t_{j}^{\mu_{1}-\mu_{j}-1}\left(1-t_{j}\right)^{\mu_{j}-\lambda_{j}-1} d t_{j} \\
& =K e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{1}\right)} \prod_{j \neq 1} \frac{\Gamma\left(\mu_{1}-\mu_{j}\right) \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{j}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\mu_{1}-\lambda_{j}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting in the value of $K$, we get the fundamental formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{11}=e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{1}\right)} \prod_{j \neq 1} \frac{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\lambda_{j}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\mu_{1}-\mu_{j}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\lambda_{1}-\mu_{j}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\mu_{1}-\lambda_{j}\right)} . \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

## 24. Computation of transport matrices

Theorem. The transport matrix $c_{i j}$ from the solutions at 0 to the solutions at $\infty$ of the basic $O D E$ is given by

$$
c_{i j}=e^{i \pi\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{j}\right)} \frac{\prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\lambda_{k}+1\right) \prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\mu_{\ell}\right)}{\prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{\ell}+1\right) \prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{k}\right)} .
$$

Proof. We obtained this formula in section 23 for $c_{11}$ when $\lambda_{i}, \mu_{j}$ took on special values. On the other hand $c_{11}$ and the right hand side are analytic functions of $\lambda_{i}, \mu_{j}$. The special values sweep out an open subset of the real part of the parameter space $U_{0}$, so by analytic continuation we must have equality for all parameters in $U_{0}$. The formula for $c_{i j}$ now follows immediately from the symmetry property of the $c_{i j}$ 's.

## IV. Vector and dual vector primary fields

25. Existence and uniqueness of vector and dual vector primary fields

Let $V$ be an irreducible representation of $S U(N)$. Then $\mathscr{V}=C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ has an action of $L G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ with $L G$ acting by multiplication and $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ by rotation, $r_{\alpha} f(\theta)=f(\theta+\alpha)$. There is corresponding infinitesimal action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \mathbb{R}$ which leaves invariant the finite energy subspace $\mathscr{V}^{0}$. We may write $\mathscr{V}^{0}=\sum \mathscr{V}(n)$ where $\mathscr{V}(n)=z^{-n} \otimes V$. Set $v_{n}=z^{n} v$ for $v \in V$. Thus $d v_{n}=-n v_{n}$ (so that $d=-i d / d \theta$ ) and $X_{n} v_{m}=(X v)_{m+n}$. Let $H_{i}$ and $H_{j}$ be irreducible positive energy representations at level $\ell$. A map $\phi: \mathscr{V}^{0} \otimes H_{j}^{0} \rightarrow H_{i}^{0}$ commuting with the action of $L^{0} \mathrm{~g} \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ is called a primary field with charge $V$. For $v \in V$ we define $\phi(v, n)=\phi\left(v_{n}\right): H_{i}^{0} \rightarrow H_{j}^{0}$ : these are called the modes of $\phi$. The intertwining property of $\phi$ is expressed in terms of the modes through the commutation relations:

$$
[X(n), \phi(v, m)]=\phi(X \cdot v, m+n), \quad[D, \phi(v, m)]=-m \phi(v, m) .
$$

Uniqueness Theorem. If $\phi: \mathscr{V}^{0} \otimes H_{j}^{0} \rightarrow H_{i}^{0}$ is a primary field, then $\phi$ restricts to a $G$-invariant map $\phi_{0}$ of $\mathscr{V}(0) \otimes H_{j}(0)=V \otimes H_{j}(0)$ into $H_{i}(0)$. Moreover $\phi$ is uniquely determined by $\phi_{0}$, the initial term of $\phi$.

Proof. $\mathscr{V}(0) \otimes H_{j}(0)$ is fixed by $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ and hence so is its image under $\phi$. It therefore must lie in $H_{i}(0)$. Since $\phi$ is $G$-equivariant (or equivalently g-equivariant), the restriction of $\phi$ is $G$-equivariant. To prove uniqueness, we must show that if the initial term $\phi_{0}$ vanishes then so too does $\phi$. It clearly suffices to show that $(\phi(\xi \otimes f), \eta)=0$ for all $\xi \in H_{j}^{0}, f \in \mathscr{V}^{0}$ and $\eta \in H_{i}^{0}$. By assumption this is true for $\xi \in H_{j}(0), v \in \mathscr{V}(0)$ and $\eta \in H_{i}(0)$. By Rot $S^{1}$-invariance, this is also true if $v \in \mathscr{V}(n)$ for $n \neq 0$ and hence for any $v \in \mathscr{V}^{0}$.

Now we assume by induction on $n$ that $\left(\phi\left(a_{n} a_{n-1} \cdots a_{1} \xi \otimes v\right), \eta\right)=0$ whenever $\xi \in H_{j}(0), \eta \in H_{i}(0), v \in \mathscr{V}^{0}$ and $a_{k}=X_{k}\left(m_{k}\right)$ with $m_{k}<0$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\phi\left(a_{n+1} a_{n} \cdots a_{1} \xi \otimes v\right), \eta\right)= & -\left(\phi\left(a_{n} \cdots a_{1} \xi \otimes a_{n+1} v\right), \eta\right) \\
& +\left(\phi\left(a_{n} \cdots a_{1} \xi \otimes v\right), a_{n+1}^{*} \eta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and both terms vanish, the first by induction and the second because

$$
a_{n+1}^{*} \eta=X_{n+1}\left(m_{n+1}\right)^{*} \eta=-X_{n+1}\left(-m_{n+1}\right) \eta=0
$$

Finally we prove by induction on $n$ that $\left(\phi(\xi \otimes v), b_{n} \cdots b_{1} \eta\right)=0$ for all $\xi \in H_{j}^{0}, v \in \mathscr{V}^{0}, \eta \in H_{i}(0)$ and $b_{k}=X_{k}\left(m_{k}\right)$ with $m_{k}<0$. In fact

$$
\left(\phi(\xi \otimes v), b_{n+1} b_{n} \cdots b_{1} \eta\right)=\left(\phi\left(b_{n+1}^{*} \xi \otimes v+\xi \otimes b_{n+1}^{*} v\right), b_{n} \cdots b_{1} \eta\right)
$$

which vanishes by induction.
Adjoints of primary fields. Let $\phi(v, n): H_{j}^{0} \rightarrow H_{i}^{0}$ be a primary field of charge $V$. Thus $\phi(v, n)$ takes $H_{j}(m)$ into $H_{i}(m-n)$ and satisfies $[X(m), \phi(v, n)]=\phi(X \cdot v, n+m),[D, \phi(v, n)]=-n \phi(v, n)$. Hence the adjoint operator $\phi(v, n)^{*}$ carries $H_{i}(m)$ into $H_{j}(m+n)$. Let $\psi\left(v^{*}, n\right)=\phi(v,-n)^{*}$ where $v^{*} \in V^{*}$ is defined using the inner product: $v^{*}(w)=(w, v)$. Thus $\psi\left(v^{*}, n\right): H_{i}(m) \rightarrow H_{j}(m-n)$, so that $\psi\left(v^{*}, n\right)$ takes $H_{i}^{0}$ into $H_{j}^{0}$. Taking adjoints in the above equation, we get $\left[D, \psi\left(v^{*}, n\right)\right]=-n \psi\left(v^{*}, n\right)$ and $\left[X(m), \psi\left(v^{*}, n\right)\right]=\psi\left(X \cdot v^{*}, n+m\right)$. Thus $\psi\left(v^{*}, z\right)$ is a primary field of charge $V^{*}$ called the adjoint of $\phi(v, z)$. Note that the initial terms of $\psi$ and $\phi$ are related by the simple formula $\psi\left(v^{*}, 0\right)=\phi(v, 0)^{*}$. Moreover for $\xi \in H_{j}^{0}$, $\eta \in H_{i}^{0}$ we have $(\phi(v, n) \xi, \eta)=\left(\xi, \psi\left(v^{*},-n\right) \eta\right)$.

Fermionic initial terms. Let $V=V_{\square}=\mathbb{C}^{N}$ and $W=V_{\square} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{\ell}$. The irreducible summands of $\Lambda W=(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell}$ are precisely the permissible lowest energy spaces at level $\ell$. Note that $\Lambda W$ can naturally be identified with the lowest energy subspace of $\mathscr{F}_{W}=\underset{V}{\mathscr{F}} \stackrel{\Delta \ell}{V}$.

Lemma. Each non-zero intertwiner $T \in \operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{\square} \otimes V_{f}, V_{g}\right)$ arises by taking the composition of the exterior multiplication map $S: W \otimes \Lambda(W) \rightarrow \Lambda(W)$ with projections onto irreducible summands of the three factors, i.e. $T=p_{g} S\left(p_{\square} \otimes p_{f}\right)$.

Proof. Let $\quad e_{f}=e_{1}^{\otimes f_{1}-f_{2}} \otimes\left(e_{1} \wedge e_{2}\right)^{\otimes f_{2}-f_{3}} \otimes \cdots \otimes\left(e_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge e_{N-1}\right)^{\otimes f_{N-1}-f_{N}}$ $\otimes I^{\otimes \ell-f_{1}+f_{N}}$ be the highest weight vector for a copy of $V_{f}$ in $(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell}$. Let $g_{i}=f_{i}$ if $i \neq k$ and $g_{k}=f_{k}+1$ so that $g$ is a permissible signature obtained by adding one box to $f$. Clearly the corresponding highest weight vector $e_{g}$ is obtained by exterior multiplication by $e_{k}$ in the $f_{1}-f_{k}$ copy of $\Lambda V$ in $(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell}$. Let $S: W \otimes \Lambda(W) \rightarrow \Lambda(W)$ be the map $w \otimes x \mapsto w \wedge x$. Let $p_{\square}$ be the projection onto the $f_{1}-f_{k}$ copy of $V$ in $W=V \otimes \mathbb{C}^{\ell}$. Then, up to a sign,
$S\left(p_{\square} \otimes I\right): V \otimes(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell} \rightarrow(\Lambda V)^{\otimes \ell}$ is the operation of exterior multiplication by elements of $V$ on the $f_{1}-f_{k}$ copy of $\Lambda V$. Let $p_{f}, p_{g}$ be the projections onto the irreducible modules $V_{f}, V_{g}$ generated by $e_{f}$ and $e_{g}$. Then $T=p_{g} S\left(p_{\square} \otimes p_{f}\right): V \otimes V_{f} \rightarrow V_{g}$ satisfies $T\left(e_{k} \otimes e_{f}\right)= \pm e_{g}$. Hence $T$ is nonzero. Since $S$ and the three projections are $S U(N)$-equivariant, it follows that $T$ is also, as required.

Construction of all vector primary fields. Any $S U(N)$-intertwiner $\phi(0): V_{\square} \otimes H_{j}(0) \rightarrow H_{i}(0)$ is the initial term of a vector primary field. All vector primary fields arise as compressions of fermions so satisfy $\|\phi(f)\| \leq A\|f\|_{2} \quad$ for $\quad f \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, V_{\square}\right)$. The map $f \mapsto \phi(f)$ extends continuously to $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V\right)$ and satisfies the global covariance relation $\pi_{j}(g) \phi(f) \pi_{i}(g)^{*}=\phi(g \cdot f)$ for $g \in \mathscr{L} G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Proof. By the result on initial terms, it is possible to find an $S U(N)$-equivariant map $V \rightarrow W, v \mapsto \bar{v}$ and projections $p_{i}$ and $p_{j}$ onto $S U(N)$-submodules of $\Lambda W$ isomorphic to $V_{i}$ and $V_{j}$ such that $p_{i} a\left(\bar{v}_{0}\right) p_{j}: V_{j} \rightarrow V_{i}$ is the given initial term. But $V_{i}$ and $V_{j}$ generate $L G$ modules $H_{i}$ and $H_{j}$ with corresponding projections $P_{i}$ and $P_{j}$. The required primary field is $\phi_{i j}(v, n)=P_{i} a\left(\bar{v}_{n}\right) P_{j}$ which clearly has all the stated properties.

Dual vector primary fields. Since the adjoint of a vector primary field is a dual vector primary field, we immediately deduce the following result.

Theorem. Any $S U(N)$-intertwiner $\phi(0): V_{\bar{\square}} \otimes H_{j}(0) \rightarrow H_{i}(0)$ is the initial term of a dual vector primary field. All vector dual primary fields arise as compressions of adjoints of fermions so satisfy $\|\phi(f)\| \leq A\|f\|_{2}$ for $f \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{1}, V_{\bar{\square}}\right)$. The map $f \mapsto \phi(f)$ extends continuously to $L^{2}\left(S^{1}, V_{\bar{\square}}\right)$ and satisfies the global covariance relation $\pi_{j}(g) \phi(f) \pi_{i}(g)^{*}=\phi(g \cdot f)$ for $g \in \mathscr{L} G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.
26. Transport equations for four-point functions and braiding of primary fields

We now establish the braiding properties of primary fields. We divide the circle up into two complementary open intervals $I, I^{c}$ with $I$ the upper semicircle, $I^{c}$ the lower semicircle say. Let $f, g$ be test functions with $f$ supported in $I$ and $g$ in $I^{c}$, so that $f \in C_{c}^{\infty}(I)$ and $g \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(I^{c}\right)$. In general the braiding relations for primary fields will have the following form

$$
\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g)=\sum c_{k, h} \phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} \cdot g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} \cdot f\right),
$$

where the braiding matrix $\left(c_{k h}\right)$ and the phase corrections $\mu_{k h}$ also depend on $i, k, h$ and $j$. For $f \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(S^{1} \backslash\{1\}\right)$, the expression $e_{\mu} f$ is defined (unambiguously) by cutting the circle at 1 , so that $e_{\mu} \cdot f\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=e^{i \mu \theta} f\left(e^{i \theta}\right)$ for $\theta \in(0,2 \pi)$. To prove the braiding relation we introduce the formal power series
$F_{k}(z)=\sum_{n \geq 0} z^{n}\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, n) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v,-n) \xi, \eta\right), G_{h}(z)=\sum_{n \geq 0} z^{n}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}(v, n) \phi_{h j}^{U}(u,-n) \xi, \eta\right)$,
where $\xi$ and $\eta$ range over lowest energy vectors. These power series are called (reduced) four-point functions and take values in $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(U \otimes V \otimes V_{j}, V_{i}\right)$. Since the modes $\phi_{i j}^{U}(n)$ and $\phi_{p q}^{V}(n)$ are uniformly bounded in norm, they define holomorphic functions for $|z|<1$. We start by showing how the matrix coefficients of products of primary fields can be recovered from fourpoint functions.

Proposition 1. Let $F_{k}(z)=\sum_{n \geq 0}\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, n) \phi_{k j}^{V}\left(v_{2}-n\right) \xi, \eta\right) z^{n}=\sum F_{n} z^{n}$, convergent in $|z|<1$. If $f \in C_{c}^{\infty}(I), g \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(I^{c}\right)$ and $\widetilde{f}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=f\left(e^{-i \theta}\right)$, then

$$
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\lim _{r \uparrow 1} \frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \widetilde{f} \star g\left(e^{i \theta}\right) F_{k}\left(r e^{i \theta}\right) d \theta
$$

Proof. If $f(z)=\sum f_{n} z^{n}$ and $g(z)=g_{n} z^{n}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)= & \sum_{n \geq 0} f_{n} g_{-n}\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, n) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v,-n) \xi, \eta\right) \\
& =\lim _{r \uparrow 1} \frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \widetilde{f} \star g\left(e^{i \theta}\right) F_{k}\left(r e^{i \theta}\right) d \theta
\end{aligned}
$$

Corollary. Suppose that $f \in C_{c}^{\infty}(I), g \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(I^{c}\right)$ and suppose further that $F_{k}(z)$ extends to a continuous function on $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$. Then

$$
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{0+}^{2 \pi-} \widetilde{f} \star g\left(e^{i \theta}\right) F_{k}\left(e^{i \theta}\right) d \theta .
$$

Proof. The assumptions on $f$ and $g$ imply that the support of $\widetilde{f} \star g\left(e^{i \theta}\right)$ is contained in $[\delta, 2 \pi-\delta]$ for some $\delta>0$, so the result follows.

The next result explains how to translate from transport equations for four point functions to braiding relations for smeared primary fields. It is the analogue of the Bargmann-Hall-Wightman theorem in axiomatic quantum field theory [20, 36].

Proposition 2. Suppose that $U$ and $V$ are the vector representation or its dual. Let
$F_{k}(z)=\sum\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, n) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v,-n) \xi, \eta\right) z^{n}, G_{h}(z)=\sum\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}(v, n) \phi_{h j}^{U}(u,-n) \xi, \eta\right) z^{n}$,
where $\xi$ and $\eta$ are lowest energy vectors. If $F_{k}(z), G_{h}\left(z^{-1}\right)$ extend to continuous functions on $S^{\backslash} \backslash\{1\}$ with

$$
F_{k}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=\sum c_{k h} e^{i \mu_{k h} \theta} G_{h}\left(e^{-i \theta}\right)
$$

where $\mu_{k h} \in \mathbb{R}$, then for $f \in C_{c}^{\infty}(0, \pi), g \in C_{c}^{\infty}(\pi,, 2 \pi)$ we have

$$
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\sum c_{k h}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} \cdot g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} \cdot f\right) \xi, \eta\right)
$$

where $e_{\mu}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=e^{i \mu \theta}$ for $\theta \in(0,2 \pi)$.
Proof. For $\theta \in(0,2 \pi)$ we have $F_{k}\left(e^{i \theta}\right)=\sum c_{k h} e^{i \mu_{k h} \theta} G_{h}\left(e^{-i \theta}\right)$. Substituting in the equation of the corollary and changing variables from $\theta$ to $2 \pi-\theta$, we obtain

$$
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\sum c_{k h} \frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{0+}^{2 \pi-} e^{2 i \mu_{k h} \pi} e^{-i \mu_{k h} \theta} \widetilde{g} \star f\left(e^{i \theta}\right) G_{k}\left(e^{i \theta}\right) d \theta
$$

It can be checked directly that $e_{-\mu} \cdot(\widetilde{g} \star f)=e^{-2 \pi i \mu} \widetilde{e_{\mu} \cdot g} \star\left(e_{-\mu} \cdot f\right)$ (the corresponding identity is trivial for point measures supported in $(0, \pi)$ and $(\pi, 2 \pi)$ and follows in general by weak continuity); this implies the braiding relation.

A standard argument with lowering and raising operators allows us to extend this braiding relation to arbitrary finite energy vectors $\xi$ and $\eta$ and hence arbitrary vectors.

Proposition 3. If

$$
\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\sum c_{k h}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} \cdot g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} \cdot f\right) \xi, \eta\right)
$$

for $\xi, \eta$ lowest energy vectors, then the relation holds for all vectors $\xi, \eta$.
Proof. By bilinearity and continuity, it will suffice to prove the braiding relation for finite energy vectors $\xi, \eta$. Suppose that $\eta$ is a lowest energy vector. We start by proving that the braiding relations holds for $\xi, \eta$ by induction on the energy of $\xi$. When $\xi$ has lowest energy, the relation is true by assumption. Now suppose that the relation holds for $\xi_{1}, \eta$. Let us prove it for $\xi, \eta$ where $\xi=X(-n) \xi_{1}$, where $n>0$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi, \eta\right)=\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) X(-n) \xi_{1}, \eta\right) \\
& =- \\
& =-\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}\left(X v, e_{-n} \cdot g\right) \xi_{1}, \eta\right)-\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}\left(X u, e_{-n} \cdot f\right) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g) \xi_{1}, \eta\right) \\
& \quad \\
& \quad-\sum_{h} c_{k h}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}\left(X v, e_{\mu_{k h}} e_{-n} g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} e_{-n} f\right) \xi_{1}, \eta\right) \\
& = \\
& =\sum_{h} c_{k h}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} f\right) \xi, \eta\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

This proves the braiding relation for all $\xi$ and all lowest energy vectors $\eta$. A similar inductive argument shows the braiding relation holds for all $\xi$ and all $\eta$.

Corollary 1. If $f$ and $g$ are supported in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ and the support of $g$ is anticlockwise after the support of $f$, then

$$
\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g)=\sum c_{k h} \phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} \cdot g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} \cdot f\right) .
$$

Proof. This result follows immediately from the proposition, using a partition of unity and rotating if necessary so that neither the support of $f$ nor $g$ pass 1 .

Corollary 2. If $f$ and $g$ are supported in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ and the support of $g$ is anticlockwise after the support of $f$, then

$$
\phi_{i k}^{U}(u, f) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, g)=\sum d_{k h} \phi_{i h}^{V}\left(v, e_{\mu_{k h}} \cdot g\right) \phi_{h j}^{U}\left(u, e_{-\mu_{k h}} \cdot f\right),
$$

where $d_{k h}=e^{2 \pi i \mu_{k h}} c_{k h}$.
Proof. This follows by applying a rotation of $180^{\circ}$ in the proposition and then repeating the reasoning in the proof of corollary 1.

## 27. Sugawara's formula

Let $H$ be a positive energy irreducible representation at level $\ell$ and let $\left(X_{i}\right)$ be an orthonormal basis of g . Let $L_{0}$ be the operator defined on $H^{0}$ by

$$
L_{0}=\frac{1}{N+\ell}\left(-\sum_{i} \frac{1}{2} X_{i}(0) X_{i}(0)-\sum_{n>0} \sum_{i} X_{i}(-n) X_{i}(n)\right) .
$$

Then $L_{0}=D+\Delta / 2(N+\ell)$ if $-\sum_{i} X_{i}(0) X_{i}(0)$ acts on $H(0)$ as multiplication by $\Delta$.

Remark. Note that the operator $C=-\sum X_{i} X_{i}=\sum E_{i j} E_{j i}-\left(\sum E_{i i}\right)^{2} / N$ acts in $V_{f}$ as the constant

$$
\Delta_{f}=\left[\sum f_{i}^{2}+f_{i}(N-2 i+1)\right]-\left(\sum f_{i}\right)^{2} / N
$$

In particular, for the adjoint representation on $\mathrm{g}\left(f_{1}=1, f_{2}=f_{3}\right.$ $=\cdots=f_{N-1}=0, f_{N}=-1$ ) we have $\Delta=2 N$.

Proof (cf [30]). Since $\sum_{i} X_{i}(a) X_{i}(b)$ is independent of the orthonormal basis $\left(X_{i}\right)$, it commutes with $G$ and hence each $X(0)$ for $X \in \mathrm{~g}$. Thus $\sum_{i}\left[X, X_{i}\right](a) X_{i}(b)+X_{i}(a)\left[X, X_{i}\right](b)=0$ for all $a, b$. If $A=\sum_{i} \frac{1}{2} X_{i}(0) X_{i}(0)+$ $\sum_{n>0} X_{i}(-n) X_{i}(n)$, then using the above relation we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
{[X(1), A] } & =N \ell X(1)+\sum_{i} \frac{1}{2}\left(\left[X, X_{i}\right](1) X_{i}(0)+X_{i}(0)\left[X, X_{i}\right](1)\right) \\
& +\sum_{n}\left[X, X_{i}\right](-n+1) X_{i}(n)+X_{i}(-n)\left[X, X_{i}\right](n+1) \\
& =N \ell X(1)+\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i}\left[\left[X, X_{i}\right](1), X_{i}(0)\right]=N \ell X(1)+\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i}\left[\left[X, X_{i}\right], X_{i}\right](0),
\end{aligned}
$$

since $\left(\left[X, X_{i}\right], X_{i}\right)=0$ by invariance of $(\cdot, \cdot)$. Hence $[X(1), A]=(N+\ell) X(1)$, since $-\sum_{i}$ ad $\left(X_{i}\right)^{2}=2 N$. Now formally $X(1)^{*}=-X(-1)$ and $A^{*}=A$, so taking adjoints we get $[X(-1), A]=-(N+\ell) X(-1)$, so that $(N+\ell) D+A$ commutes with all $X( \pm 1)$ 's. Since $[\mathrm{g}, \mathrm{g}]=\mathrm{g}$, these generate $L^{0} \mathrm{~g}$, and hence $(N+\ell) D+A=\lambda I$ for some $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. Evaluating on $H(0)$, we get $\lambda=-\Delta / 2$.

## 28. The Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov ODE (cf [23])

Let $\phi(a, n): H_{j}^{0} \rightarrow H_{k}^{0} \quad$ and $\quad \phi(b, m): H_{k}^{0} \rightarrow H_{i}^{0} \quad$ be primary fields of charges $V_{2}$ and $V_{3}$ respectively. Let $a_{n m}$ be the matrix coefficient $a_{n m}=$ $\left(\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) \phi\left(v_{3}, m\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right)$, where $V_{4}=H_{j}(0)$ and $V_{1}=H_{i}(0)$. Since $D v_{4}=0$ $=D v_{1}$ and $\left[D, \phi\left(v_{2}, n\right)\right]=-n \phi\left(v_{2}, n\right),\left[D, \phi\left(v_{3}, m\right)\right]=-m \phi\left(v_{3}, m\right)$, it follows immediately that $a_{n, m}=0$ unless $n+m=0$. Moreover $\phi(a, m) v=0$ if $n>0$, so that $a_{n m}=0$ if $m>0$. We define four commuting actions of $S U(N)$ on $\operatorname{Hom}\left(V_{2} \otimes V_{3} \otimes V_{4}, V_{1}\right)$ by $\pi_{1}(g) T=g T, \pi_{2}(g) T=T\left(g^{-1} \otimes I \otimes I\right), \pi_{3}(g) T=$ $T\left(I \otimes g^{-1} \otimes I\right)$ and $\pi_{4}(g) T=T\left(I \otimes I \otimes g^{-1}\right)$. Thus $\pi_{1}(g) \pi_{2}(g) \pi_{3}(g) \pi_{4}(g) T=$ $T$ if $T$ is $G$-equivariant.

Now let $\left(X_{i}\right)$ be an orthonormal basis of g and define operators $\Omega_{i j}$ on $W=\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{2} \otimes V_{3} \otimes V_{4}, V_{1}\right)$ as $-\sum \pi_{i}\left(X_{k}\right) \pi_{j}\left(X_{k}\right)$. Thus $\Omega_{i j}=\Omega_{j i}$. Moreover, if $i, j, k$ are distinct, then $\Omega_{i j}+\Omega_{j k}+\Omega_{k i}=h$ on $W$, where $h$ is a constant. In fact, if $m$ is the missing index,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega_{i j}+\Omega_{j k}+\Omega_{k i}= & -\frac{1}{2}\left[\sum_{p}\left(\pi_{i}\left(X_{p}\right)+\pi_{j}\left(X_{p}\right)+\pi_{k}\left(X_{p}\right)\right)^{2}-\pi_{i}\left(X_{p}\right)^{2}\right. \\
& \left.-\pi_{j}\left(X_{p}\right)^{2}-\pi_{k}\left(X_{p}\right)^{2}\right] \otimes I \\
= & -\frac{1}{2}\left[\sum\left(-\pi_{m}\left(X_{p}\right)\right)^{2}+\Delta_{i}+\Delta_{j}+\Delta_{k}\right] \\
= & \left(\Delta_{m}-\Delta_{i}-\Delta_{j}-\Delta_{k}\right) / 2
\end{aligned}
$$

since g acts trivially on $W$.
Theorem. The formal power series $f(v, z)=\sum_{n \geq 0}\left(\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) \phi\left(v_{3},-n\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n}$, taking values in $W$, satisfies the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov ODE

$$
(N+\ell) \frac{d f}{d z}=\left(\frac{\Omega_{34}-\left(\Delta_{k}-\Delta_{3}-\Delta_{4}\right) / 2}{z}+\frac{\Omega_{23}}{z-1}\right) f(z) .
$$

Proof. This is proved by inserting $D$ in the 4-point function $f(z)$ and comparing it with the Sugawara formula $D=L_{0}-h$. In fact $z f^{\prime}(z)=$ $\sum_{n \geq 0}\left(\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) D \phi\left(v_{3},-n\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n}$, since $\quad[D, \phi(v, m)]=-m \phi(v, m) \quad$ and $D v_{4}=0$. Now on $H_{k}^{0}$ we have $D=L_{0}-h$ where $h=\Delta_{k} / 2(N+\ell)$, so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
z f^{\prime}(z)=- & h \cdot f(z)-(N+\ell)^{-1} \sum_{n \geq 0, i}\left[\sum_{m>0}\left(\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) X_{i}(-m) X_{i}(m) \phi\left(v_{3},-n\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n}\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{1}{2}\left(\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) X_{i}(0) X_{i}(0) \phi\left(v_{3},-n\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now $[X(n), \phi(v, m)]=\phi(X \cdot v, n+m)$, so that $\phi\left(v_{2}, n\right) X_{i}(m)=X_{i}(m) \phi\left(v_{2}, n\right)$ $-\phi\left(X_{i} \cdot v_{2}, n+m\right) \quad$ and $\quad X_{i}(m) \phi\left(v_{3}, n\right)=\phi\left(v_{3}, n\right) X_{i}(m)+\phi\left(X_{i} \cdot v_{3}, n+m\right)$. Substituting in these expressions, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
z f^{\prime}(z)= & -h \cdot f(z)+(N+\ell)^{-1} \sum_{n \leq 0, i m>0} \sum_{n}\left(\phi\left(X_{i} v_{2}, n-m\right) \phi\left(X_{i} v_{3},-n+m\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n} \\
& -(2(N+\ell))^{-1} \sum_{n \geq 0, i}\left(( X _ { i } ( 0 ) \phi ( v _ { 2 } , n ) - \phi ( X _ { i } v _ { 2 } , n ) ) \left(\phi\left(v_{3},-n\right) X_{i}(0)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\phi\left(X_{i} v_{3},-n\right)\right) v_{4}, v_{1}\right) z^{n} \\
= & (N+\ell)^{-1}\left(-\Delta_{k} / 2-\frac{1}{2} \Omega_{23} \frac{z}{1-z}-\frac{1}{2}\left(\Omega_{23}+\Omega_{13}+\Omega_{14}+\Omega_{24}\right)\right) f(z) \\
= & (N+\ell)^{-1}\left(\Omega_{34}-\frac{1}{2}\left(\Delta_{k}-\Delta_{3}-\Delta_{4}\right)+\Omega_{23} \frac{z}{z-1}\right) f(z) .
\end{aligned}
$$

29. Braiding relations between vector and dual vector primary fields

Consider the four-point functions $F_{k}(z)=\sum_{n \geq 0}\left(\phi_{i k}^{U}(u,-n) \phi_{k j}^{V}(v, n) \xi, \eta\right) z^{n}$ and $G_{h}(z)=\sum_{n \geq 0}\left(\phi_{i h}^{V}(v,-n) \phi_{h j}^{U}(u, n) \xi, \eta\right) z^{n}$, where the charges $U$ and $V$ are either $\mathbb{C}^{N}$ or its dual. Thus any $V_{k}$ appears with multiplicity one in the tensor product $V \otimes V_{j}$ or $U \otimes V_{j}$, and all but possibly one of these summands will be permissible at level $\ell$.

Proposition. (a) $f_{k}(z)=z^{\lambda_{k}} F_{k}(z)$ satisfies the $K Z O D E$

$$
(N+\ell) \frac{d f}{d z}=\frac{\Omega_{v j}}{z} f(z)+\frac{\Omega_{u v}}{z-1} f(z)
$$

where $\lambda_{k}=\left(\Delta_{k}-\Delta_{v}-\Delta_{j}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ is the eigenvalue of $(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{v j}$ corresponding to the summand $V_{k} \subset V \otimes V_{j}$.
(b) $g_{h}(z)=z^{\mu_{h}} G_{h}\left(z^{-1}\right)$ satisfies the same $O D E$, where $\mu_{h}=\left(\Delta_{i}-\Delta_{v}-\Delta_{h}\right) /$ $2(N+\ell)$ is the eigenvalue of $(N+\ell)^{-1}\left(\Omega_{v j}+\Omega_{u v}\right)$ corresponding to the summand $V_{h} \subset U \otimes V_{j}$.

Proof. (a) Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega_{v j}=-\sum \pi_{v}\left(X_{i}\right) \pi_{j}\left(X_{i}\right)= & -\frac{1}{2} \sum\left(\pi_{v}(X)+\pi_{j}(X)\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{2} \sum \pi_{q}\left(X_{i}\right)^{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \sum \pi_{j}\left(X_{i}\right)^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

$(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{v j}$ acts as the scalar $\lambda_{k}=\left(\Delta_{k}-\Delta_{v}-\Delta_{j}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ on the subspace $V_{k} \subset V \otimes V_{j}$. Thus the result follows from the previous section.
(b) Similarly $\left.v_{h}=\Delta_{h}-\Delta_{u}-\Delta_{j}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ eigenvalue of $(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{u j}$ corresponding to the summand $V_{h}$ of $U \otimes V_{j}$. Let $\mu=\left(\Delta_{i}-\Delta_{u}-\Delta_{v}-\right.$ $\left.\Delta_{j}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$. It is easy to verify that $h(z)=z^{\mu-v_{h}} G_{h}\left(z^{-1}\right)$ satisfies the same ODE, since $(N+\ell)^{-1}\left(\Omega_{u v}+\Omega_{v j}+\Omega_{j u}\right)=\mu$ on $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(U \otimes V \otimes V_{j}, V_{i}\right)$. Here $\mu_{h}=\mu-v_{h}=\left(\Delta_{i}-\Delta_{v}-\Delta_{h}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ is the eigenvalue of $(N+\ell)^{-1}$ $\left(\Omega_{v j}+\Omega_{u v}\right)$ corresponding to the summand $V_{h} \subset U \otimes V_{j}$.

Thus the solutions $f_{k}(z)$ form part of a complete set of solutions about 0 of the KZ ODE; and the solutions $g_{h}(z)$ form part of a solution set about $\infty$ of the same ODE. They may only form part, because one of the summands $V_{k}$ or $V_{h}$, and hence eigenvalues $\lambda_{k}$ or $\mu_{h}$, might correspond to a representation not permissible at level $\ell$; there can be at most one such summand. Let $f_{k}(z)$ and $g_{h}(z)$ denote the two complete sets of solutions, regardless of whether the eigenvalues $\lambda_{k}$ or $\mu_{h}$ are permissible. They define holomorphic functions in $\mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$. Let $c_{k h}$ be the transport matrix relating the solutions at 0 to the solutions around $\infty$, so that $f_{k}(z)=\sum c_{k h} g_{h}(z)$ for $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$. Thus $F_{k}(z)=\sum c_{k h} z^{\mu_{k h}} G_{h}\left(z^{-1}\right)$, for $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash[0, \infty)$ where $\mu_{k h}=\mu_{h}-\lambda_{k}=\left(\Delta_{i}+\Delta_{j}-\right.$ $\left.\Delta_{h}-\Delta_{k}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$. Whenever an $F_{k}$ or $G_{h}$ does not correspond to a product of primary fields (because $V_{k}$ or $V_{h}$ is not permissible at level $\ell$ ), we will find that the corresponding transport coefficient $c_{k h}$ is zero. (This is not accidental. As explained in [43], there is an algebraic boundary condition which picks out the solutions that arise as four-point functions.) All the examples we will consider will be those for which the theory of the previous chapter is applicable.

Theorem A (generalised hypergeometric braiding). Let $F \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $G \in L^{2}\left(J, V^{*}\right)$ where $I$ and $J$ are intervals in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$. Then

$$
\phi_{g f}^{\square}(F) \phi_{f g}^{\bar{\square}}(G)=\sum v_{f h} \phi_{g h}^{\bar{\square}}\left(e_{\mu_{f h}} G\right) \phi_{h g}^{\square}\left(e_{-\mu_{f h}} F\right)
$$

with $v_{f h} \neq 0$, if $h>g$ and $\mu_{f h}=\left(2 \Delta_{g}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{h}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$.
Proof. The KZ ODE reads

$$
(N+\ell) \frac{d f}{d z}=\frac{\Omega_{\bar{\square} f} f(z)}{z}+\frac{\Omega_{\square \bar{\square}} f(z)}{z-1},
$$

where $f(z)$ takes values in $W=\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{\square} \otimes V_{\bar{\square}} \otimes V_{g}, V_{g}\right)$. Now the eigenvalue of $\Omega_{\square \bar{\square}}$ corresponding to the trivial representation is
$\left(0-\Delta_{\square}-\Delta_{\bar{\square}}\right) / 2=N^{-1}-N$ and has multiplicity one, while that corresponding to the adjoint representation is $\left(\Delta_{\text {Ad }}-\Delta_{\square}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2=N^{-1}$ with multiplicity at most $N-1$. Thus $\Omega_{\square \bar{\square}}=N^{-1}-N Q$, if $Q$ is the rank one projection in $W$ corresponding to the trivial representation. So

$$
-(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{\square \square}=\frac{N}{N+\ell} Q-\frac{1}{N(N+\ell)}
$$

Thus $\alpha=1 / N(N+\ell)$ and $\beta=N /(N+\ell)$ (in the notation of section 18).
We next check that $A=(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{\bar{\square} f}$ and $Q$ are in general position. In fact if we identify $W$ with $\operatorname{End}_{G}\left(V_{g} \otimes V_{\square}\right)$, then the inner product becomes $\operatorname{Tr}\left(x y^{*}\right)$. The identity operator $I$ is the generator of the range of $Q$ with $Q(x)$ proportional to $\operatorname{Tr}(x)$. The eigenvectors of $A$ are just given by the orthogonal projections $e_{g}$ onto the irreducible summands $V_{g}$ of $V_{f} \otimes V_{\square}$. Since $\operatorname{Tr}\left(e_{g}\right)>0$, it follows that $A$ and $Q$ are in general position.

The eigenvalues of $A$ are given by $\lambda_{f}=\left(\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\bar{\square}}-\Delta_{g}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$, so that $\left|\lambda_{f}-\lambda_{f_{1}}\right|=\left|\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{f_{1}}\right| / 2(N+\ell)$. This has the form $\left|g_{i}-g_{j}-i+j\right| /(N+\ell)$ for $i \neq j$, if $f$ and $f_{1}$ are obtained by removing boxes from the $i$ th and $j$ th rows of $g$. Since $g_{i}+N-i$ is strictly increasing and $g_{1}-g_{N} \leq \ell$, the maximum possible difference is $\left|g_{N}-g_{1}-N+1\right| /(N+\ell)=$ $1-(N+\ell)^{-1}<1$. Hence $0<\left|\lambda_{f}-\lambda_{f_{1}}\right|<1$ if $f \neq f_{1}$. Similarly $\mu_{h}=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{h}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ and the difference $\left|\mu_{h}-\mu_{h_{1}}\right|$ has the form $\left|g_{i}-g_{j}-i+j\right| /(N+\ell)$ for $i \neq j$, if $h$ and $h_{1}$ are obtained by adding boxes to the $i$ th and $j$ th rows of $g$. Hence $0<\left|\mu_{h}-\mu_{h_{1}}\right|<1$ if $h \neq h_{1}$.

Caveat. The indexing sets for the $f_{j}{ }^{\prime}$ and $h_{k}$ 's are distinct, even though they have the same cardinality. This is easy to see if one draws $f$ as a Young diagram. The $f_{j}$ 's correspond to corners pointing north-west while the $h_{k}$ 's correspond to corners pointing south-east.

The anomaly $\mu_{f h}$ is given by the stated formula by our preamble, so it only remains to check that permitted terms $c_{f h}$ are non-zero and forbidden terms zero. In fact the numerator is always non-zero because $\Gamma(x) \neq 0$ for all $x \notin-\mathbb{N}$. Thus the only way $c_{f h}$ can vanish is if one of the arguments of $\Gamma$ in the denominator $\prod_{\ell \neq j} \Gamma\left(\lambda_{i}-\mu_{\ell}+\alpha+1\right) \prod_{k \neq i} \Gamma\left(\mu_{j}-\lambda_{k}-\alpha\right)$ is a non-positive integer. Now $\mu_{h}=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{h}-\Delta_{\bar{\square}}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ and $\lambda_{f}=\left(\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\bar{\square}}\right.$ $\left.-\Delta_{g}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$. Suppose that $h$ is obtained by adding a box to the $i$ th row of $g$ and $f$ is obtained by removing a box from the $j$ th row of $g$. Then $\lambda_{f}-\mu_{h}=(N+\ell)^{-1}\left(g_{j}-g_{i}+1+i-j-N^{-1}\right)$. Thus

$$
\lambda_{f}-\mu_{h}+\alpha=(N+\ell)^{-1}\left(g_{j}-g_{i}+1+i-j\right) .
$$

This has modulus less than 1 unless $i=1, j=N$ and $g_{1}-g_{N}=\ell$, when it gives -1 . It is then easy to see that if $f$ or $h$ is non-permissible, the corresponding coefficient vanishes and otherwise it is non-zero.

The next example of braiding could have been done using the classical theory of the hypergeometric function [17, 47]; however, since the equation
is in matrix form and some knowledge of Young's orthogonal form is required to translate this matrix equation into the hypergeometric equation, it is much simpler to use the matrix and eigenvalue techniques.

Theorem B (hypergeometric braiding). Let $F \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $G \in L^{2}(J, V)$ where $I$ and $J$ are intervals in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$. Then $\phi_{h g}^{\square}(F) \phi_{g f}^{\square}(G)=\sum \mu_{g g_{1}} \phi_{h g_{1}}^{\square}\left(e_{\alpha_{g g_{1}}} G\right) \phi_{g_{1} f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha_{g g_{1}}} F\right)$ with $\quad \mu_{g g_{1}} \neq 0$, if $h>g$, $g_{1}>f$ and $\alpha_{g g_{1}}=\left(\Delta_{h}+\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{g_{1}}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$.

Proof. In this case $W=\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{\square} \otimes V_{\square} \otimes V_{f}, V_{h}\right)$ has dimension 2. The eigenvalues of $(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{\square}$ correspond to the summands $V_{\square}$ and $V_{\boxminus}$. We have $\lambda_{\square}=\left(\Delta_{\square}-2 \Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)=(N-1) / N(N+\ell)$ and $\lambda_{\boxminus}=$ $\left(\Delta_{\square}-2 \Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)=(-N-1) / N(N+\ell)$. If $Q$ is the projection corresponding to $V_{日}$ and $\beta Q-\alpha I=-(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{\square}$, then $\beta=2 / N(N+\ell)$ and $\alpha=(N-1) / N(N+\ell)$.

We have $\lambda_{g}=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ and $\mu_{g}=\left(\Delta_{h}-\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{\square}\right) /$ $2(N+\ell)$. Thus $\quad\left|\lambda_{g}-\lambda_{g_{1}}\right|=\left|\mu_{g}-\mu_{g_{1}}\right|=\left|\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{g_{1}}\right| / 2(N+\ell)=\mid f_{i}-i-$ $f_{j}+j \mid /(N+\ell)$, if $g$ and $g_{1}$ are obtained by adding boxes to $f$ in the $i$ th and $j$ th rows. As above, it follows that $\left|\lambda_{g}-\lambda_{g_{1}}\right|=\left|\mu_{g}-\mu_{g_{1}}\right|<1$.

We next check that the operators $A=(N+\ell)^{-9} \Omega_{\square f}$ and $Q$ are in general position. The operator $\Omega_{\square}$ is a linear combination of the identity operator id and $\sigma$, where $\sigma(T)=T(S \otimes I)$ and $S$ is the flip on $V_{\square} \otimes V_{\square}$. The operators $T_{i}$ in $W$ which diagonalise $\Omega_{\square f}$ are obtained by composing intertwiners $V_{\square} \otimes V_{f} \rightarrow V_{g_{i}}$ and $V_{\square} \otimes V_{g_{i}} \rightarrow V_{h}$. These intertwiners are specified by their action on vectors $e_{i} \otimes v$ where $\left(e_{i}\right)$ is a basis of $V_{\square}$ and $v$ is a highest weight vector. If $g_{1}$ and $g_{2}$ are obtained by adding boxes to $f$ in rows $i$ and $j$ with $i, j$, it is easy to see that $T_{2}\left(e_{i} \otimes e_{j} \otimes v_{f}\right)$ is a non-zero highest weight vector in $V_{h}$ while $\sigma\left(T_{2}\right)\left(e_{i} \otimes e_{j} \otimes v_{f}\right)=T_{2}\left(e_{j} \otimes e_{i} \otimes v_{f}\right)=0$. So $T_{2}$ is not an eigenvector of $\sigma$. This proves that $A$ and $Q$ are in general position.

The anomaly $\alpha_{g g_{1}}$ is as stated by our preamble, so it only remains to check that permitted terms $c_{g g_{1}}$ are non-zero and forbidden terms zero. As above, a term can vanish iff one of the arguments in the denominator $\Gamma\left(\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g_{1}^{\prime}}+\alpha+1\right) \Gamma\left(\mu_{g_{1}^{\prime}}-\lambda_{g^{\prime}}-\alpha\right)$ is a non-positive integer (where $g^{\prime}$ denotes the other diagram to $g$ between $f$ and $h$ ). Now $\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g_{1}}=$ $\left(\Delta_{g}+\Delta_{g_{1}}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{h}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$. Hence $\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g^{\prime}}=1 / N(N+\ell)$, so that $\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g^{\prime}}+\alpha+1=1+(N+\ell)^{-1}$ and $\mu_{g^{\prime}}-\lambda_{g}-\alpha=-(N+\ell)^{-1}$. This shows that, if $g$ is permissible, none of the arguments is a non-positive integer and hence that $c_{g g} \neq 0$. On the other hand $\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g}=$ $\left(f_{i}-i-f_{j}+j\right) /(N+\ell)+1 / N(N+\ell)$, if $g$ is obtained by adding a box to the $i$ th row of $f$. Thus $\lambda_{g}-\mu_{g}+\alpha+1=1+\left(f_{i}-i-f_{j}+j+1\right) /(N+\ell)$, which can never be a non-positive integer, while

$$
\mu_{g^{\prime}}-\lambda_{g^{\prime}}-\alpha=\left(f_{i}-i-f_{j}+j-1\right) /(N+\ell)
$$

This has modulus less than 1 unless $i=N, j=1$ and $f_{1}-f_{N}=\ell$, when it gives -1 . This is the critical case where $g$ is permissible (it is obtained by
adding a box to the last row of $f$ ) while $g^{\prime}$ is inadmissible (it is obtained by adding a box to the first row of $f$ ). In this case therefore $c_{g g^{\prime}}=0$ while in all other cases the coefficient is non-zero.

Theorem C (Abelian braiding). Let $F \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $G \in L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V^{*}\right)$. Let $g \neq g_{1}$ be signatures, permissible at level $\ell$, obtained by adding one box to $f$. Then $\quad \phi_{g f}^{\square}(F) \phi_{f g_{1}}^{\bar{\square}}(G)=\varepsilon \phi \phi_{g h}^{\bar{\square}}\left(e_{\mu} G\right) \phi_{h g_{1}}^{\square}\left(e_{-\mu} F\right) \quad$ with $\quad \varepsilon \neq 0 \quad$ and $\quad \mu=\left(\Delta_{g}+\right.$ $\left.\Delta_{g_{1}}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{h}\right) / 2$.

Proof. The corresponding ODE takes values in the one-dimensional space $\operatorname{Hom}_{G}\left(V_{\square} \otimes V_{\bar{\square}} \otimes V_{g_{1}}, V_{g}\right)$ so $\varepsilon$ must be non-zero and $\mu$ is as stated by our preamble.

Theorem D (Abelian braiding). Suppose that $g$ is the unique signature such that $h>g>f$, so that $h$ is obtained either by adding two boxes in the same row of $f$ (symmetric case + ) or in the same column (antisymmetric case -). Let $F \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $G \in L^{2}(J, V)$ where $I$ and $J$ are intervals in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$. Then there are non-zero constants $\delta_{+} \neq \delta_{-}$depending only on the case such that

$$
\phi_{h g}^{\square}(F) \phi_{g f}^{\square}(G)=\delta_{ \pm} \phi_{h g}^{\square}\left(e_{\alpha} G\right) \phi_{g f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha} F\right)
$$

with $\delta_{ \pm} \neq 0$ and $\alpha=\left(\Delta_{h}+\Delta_{f}-2 \Delta_{g}\right) / 2$. In fact $\delta_{ \pm}=e^{i \pi v_{ \pm}}$where $v_{ \pm}=( \pm N-1) / N(N+\ell)$.

Proof. We use the same reasoning as in the proof of Theorem C. The ODE is now a scalar equation $f^{\prime}=\left(\lambda_{g} z^{-1}+v_{ \pm}(z-1)^{-1}\right) f$. The $v_{+}$and $v_{-}$are the eigenvalues of $(N+\ell)^{-1} \Omega_{\square}$ corresponding to the summands $V_{\square}$ and $V_{\boxminus}$ respectively. So $v_{ \pm}=( \pm N-1) / N(N+\ell)$. The normalised solution near 0 of the ODE is $z^{\lambda_{g}}(1-z)^{v_{ \pm}}$while near $\infty$ it is $z^{\lambda_{g}+v_{ \pm}}\left(1-z^{-1}\right)^{v_{ \pm}}$. Taking $z=-x$, with $x$ real and positive, it follows immediately that the transport coefficient is $e^{i \pi v_{ \pm}}$.

Summary of braiding properties. If we define $a_{g f}^{\square}=\phi_{g f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha} F\right)$ where $\alpha=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ and $a_{f g}^{\bar{\square}}=\phi_{f g}^{\bar{G}}\left(e_{\alpha} F^{*}\right)$, then the adjoint relation between these two primary fields implies that $\left(a_{g f}^{\square}\right)^{*}=a_{f g}^{\bar{\square}}$. Incorporating the anomalies $e_{\mu}$ into the smeared primary fields in this way, the braiding properties established above for vector and dual vector primary fields may be stated in the following form.

Theorem. Let $\left(a_{i j}\right),\left(b_{i j}\right)$ denote vector primary fields smeared in intervals I and $J$ in $S^{l} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$.
(a) $a_{g f} b_{g_{1} f}^{*}=\sum v_{h} b_{h g}^{*} a_{h g_{1}}$ with $v_{h} \neq 0$, if $h>g, g_{1}>f$.
(b) $a_{g f} b_{f h}=\sum \mu_{f 1} b_{g f_{1}} a_{f_{1} h}$ with $\mu_{f_{1}} \neq 0$ if $h<f_{1}<g$.
(c) $a_{g f} b_{g_{1} f}^{*}=\varepsilon b_{h g}^{*} a_{h g_{1}}$ with $\varepsilon \neq 0$
(d) $a_{h g} b_{g f}=\delta_{ \pm} b_{h g} a_{g f}$ where $\delta_{+} \neq \delta_{-}$are non-zero, with + if $h$ is obtained from $f$ by adding two boxes in the same row and - if they are in the same column.

Note that (c) and (d) may be regarded as degenerate versions of (a) and (b) respectively so may be combined. Rotating through $180^{\circ}$ as before, or taking adjoints and simply rewriting the above equations, we obtain our final result. (For simplicity we have suppressed the resulting phase changes in the coefficients.)

Corollary. Let $\left(a_{i j}\right),\left(b_{i j}\right)$ denote vector primary fields smeared in intervals $I$ and $J$ in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$.
(a) $b_{g f} a_{g_{1} f}^{*}=\sum v_{h} a_{h g}^{*} b_{h g_{1}}$ with $v_{h} \neq 0$, if $h>g, g_{1}>$ is permissible.
(b) $b_{g f} a_{f h}=\sum \mu_{f_{1}} a_{g f_{1}} b_{f_{1} h}$ with $\mu_{f_{1}} \neq 0$ if $h<f_{1}<g$.
(c) $b_{g f} a_{g_{1} f}^{*}=\varepsilon a_{h g}^{*} b_{h g_{1}}$ with $\varepsilon \neq 0$.
(d) $b_{h g} a_{g f}=\delta_{ \pm}^{-1} a_{h g} b_{g f}$ with $\delta_{+} \neq \delta_{-}$non-zero.

## V. Connes fusion of positive energy representations

30. Definition and elementary properties of Connes fusion
for positive energy representations

In [42] and [43] we gave a fairly extensive treatment of Connes' tensor product operation on bimodules over von Neumann algebras. It was then applied to define a fusion operation on positive energy representations of $\mathscr{L} G$. Here we give a simplified direct treatment of fusion with more emphasis on loop groups than von Neumann algebras. Let $X$ and $Y$ be positive energy representations of $L G$ at level $\ell$. To define their fusion, we consider intertwiners (or fields) $x \in \mathscr{X}=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{1} G}\left(H_{0}, X\right), y \in \mathscr{Y}=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, Y\right)$ instead of the vectors (or states) $\xi=x \Omega$ and $\eta=y \Omega$ they create from the vacuum. We define an inner product on the algebraic tensor product $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ by the four-point formula $\left\langle x_{1} \otimes y_{1}, x_{2} \otimes y_{2}\right\rangle=\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1} y_{2}^{*} y_{1} \Omega, \Omega\right)$.

Lemma. The four-point formula defines an (pre-) inner product on $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$. The Hilbert space completion $H=X \boxtimes Y$ naturally admits a continuous unitary representation $\pi$ of $\mathscr{L}^{ \pm 1} G=\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$ of level $\ell$.

Proof. If $z=\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i} \in \mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$, then $\langle z, z\rangle=\sum\left(x_{i}^{*} x_{j} y_{i}^{*} y_{j} \Omega, \Omega\right)$. Now $x_{i j}=x_{i}^{*} x_{j}$ lies in $M=\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}=\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. The operator $X=\left(x_{i j}\right)$ $\in M_{n}(M)$ is non-negative, so has the form $X=A^{*} A$ for some $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ $\in M_{n}(M)$. Similarly, if $y_{i j}=y_{i}^{*} y_{j} \in M^{\prime}$, then $Y=\left(y_{i j}\right) \in M_{n}\left(M^{\prime}\right)$ can be written $Y=B^{*} B$ for some $B=\left(b_{i j}\right) \in M_{n}\left(M^{\prime}\right)$. Hence

$$
\langle z, z\rangle=\sum_{p, q, i, j}\left(a_{p i}^{*} a_{p j} b_{q i}^{*} b_{q j} \Omega, \Omega\right)=\sum_{p, q}\left\|\sum_{i} a_{p i} b_{q i} \Omega\right\|^{2} \geq 0
$$

We next check that $\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$ acts continuously on $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$, preserving the inner product. The action of $g \cdot h$ on $x \otimes y$ is given by $(g \cdot h)(x \otimes y)=g x \otimes h y$. It clearly preserves the inner product, so the group action passes to the Hilbert space completion. Note that since we have defined things on the level of central extensions, we have to check that $\zeta \in \mathbb{T}=\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cap \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$ acts by the correct scalar. This is immediate. Finally we must show that the matrix coefficients for vectors in $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ are continuous on $\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$. But

$$
\left\langle g x_{1} \otimes h y_{1}, x_{2} \otimes y_{2}\right\rangle=\left(x_{2}^{*} g x_{1} y_{2}^{*} h y_{1} \boldsymbol{\Omega}, \boldsymbol{\Omega}\right)=\left(x_{1} y_{2}^{*} h y_{1} \boldsymbol{\Omega}, g^{*} x_{2} \boldsymbol{\Omega}\right) .
$$

Since the maps $\mathscr{L}_{I} G \rightarrow X, g \mapsto g^{*} x_{2} \Omega$ and $\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G \rightarrow Y, h \mapsto h y_{1} \Omega$ are continuous, the matrix coefficient above is continuous.

Lemma. There are canonical unitary isomorphisms $H_{0} \boxtimes X \cong X \cong X \boxtimes H_{0}$.
Proof. If $Y=H_{0}$, the unitary $X \boxtimes H_{0} \rightarrow X$ is given by $x \otimes y \mapsto x y \Omega$ and the unitary $H_{0} \boxtimes X \rightarrow X$ is given by $y \otimes x \mapsto x y \Omega$.

Lemma. If $J$ is another interval of the circle and the above construction is accomplished using the local loop groups $\mathscr{L}_{J} G$ and $\mathscr{L}_{J^{c}} G$ to give a Hilbert space $K$ with a level $\ell$ unitary representation $\sigma$ of $\mathscr{L}_{J} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{J^{c}} G$, then if $\phi \in S U(1,1)$ carries I onto $J$, there is a natural unitary $U_{\phi}: H \rightarrow K$ that $U_{\phi}(\pi(g)) U_{\phi}^{*}=\sigma\left(g \circ \phi^{-1}\right)$.

Proof. Take $\phi \in S U(1,1)$ such that $\phi(I)=J$. If $x \in \mathscr{X}_{I}=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I^{c} G} G}\left(H_{0}, X\right)$ and $y \in \mathscr{Y}_{I}=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, Y\right)$. Choose once and for all unitary representatives $\pi_{X}(\phi)$ and $\pi_{Y}(\phi)$ (there is no choice for $\pi_{0}(\phi)$ ). Define $x^{\prime}=\pi_{X}(\phi) x \pi_{0}(\phi)^{*}$ and $y^{\prime}=\pi_{Y}(\phi) y \pi_{0}(\phi)^{*}$. The assignments $x \mapsto x^{\prime}, y \mapsto y^{\prime}$ give isomorphisms $\quad \mathscr{X}_{I} \rightarrow \mathscr{X}_{J}, \quad \mathscr{Y}_{I} \rightarrow \mathscr{Y}_{J}$ which preserve the inner products since $\pi_{0}(\phi) \Omega=\Omega$. Since $\pi_{X}(\phi) \pi_{X}(g) \pi_{X}(\phi)^{*}=\pi_{X}\left(g \cdot \phi^{-1}\right)$ and $\pi_{y}(\phi) \pi_{Y}(g) \pi_{Y}(\phi)^{*}=\pi_{Y}\left(g \cdot \phi^{-1}\right)$ for $\phi \in S U(1,1)$ and $g \in \mathscr{L} G$, the map $U_{\phi}: x \otimes y \mapsto x^{\prime} \otimes y^{\prime}$ extends to a unitary between $X \boxtimes{ }_{I} Y$ and $X \boxtimes_{J} Y$ such that $U_{\phi} \pi_{I}(g) U_{\phi}^{*}=\pi_{J}\left(g \cdot \phi^{-1}\right)$ for $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$.

Hilbert space continuity lemma. The natural map $\mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y} \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$ extends canonically to continuous maps $X \otimes \mathscr{Y} \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$ and $\mathscr{X} \otimes Y \rightarrow X \boxtimes Y$. In fact $\left\|\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i}\right\|^{2} \leq\left\|\sum x_{i} x_{i}^{*}\right\| \sum\left\|y_{i} \boldsymbol{\Omega}\right\|^{2}$ and $\left\|\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i}\right\|^{2} \leq\left\|\sum y_{i} y_{i}^{*}\right\| \sum\left\|x_{i} \boldsymbol{\Omega}\right\|^{2}$.

Proof (cf [25]). If $z=\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i} \in \mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$, then $\sum\left(\left(x_{i}^{*} x_{j}\right) y_{i}^{*} y_{j} \Omega, \Omega\right)=$ $\left.\sum y_{i}^{*} \pi_{Y}\left(x_{i}^{*} x_{j}\right) y_{j} \Omega, \Omega\right)$, since $S_{i j}=x_{i}^{*} x_{j}$ lies in $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G\right)^{\prime}=\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Let $\eta_{j}=y_{j} \Omega$ and $\eta=\left(\eta_{1}, \ldots, \eta_{n}\right) \in H_{0}^{n}$. Then

$$
\left\|\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i}\right\|^{2}=\left(\pi_{Y}(S) \eta, \eta\right) \leq\|S\|\|\eta\|^{2}=\left\|\sum x_{i} x_{i}^{*}\right\| \sum\left\|y_{i} \Omega\right\|^{2} .
$$

Here we used the fact that $S=x^{*} x$ where $x$ is the column vector with entries $x_{i}$; this gives $\|S\|=\left\|x^{*} x\right\|=\left\|x x^{*}\right\|_{2}=\left\|\sum x_{i} x_{i}^{*}\right\|$. Similarly we can prove that $\left\|\sum x_{i} \otimes y_{i}\right\|^{2} \leq\left\|\sum y_{i} y_{i}^{*}\right\| \sum\left\|x_{i} \Omega\right\|^{2}$.

Corollary (associativity of fusion). There is a natural unitary isomorphism $X \boxtimes(Y \boxtimes Z) \rightarrow(X \boxtimes Y) \boxtimes Z$.

Proof. The assignment $(x \otimes y) \otimes z \rightarrow x \otimes(y \otimes z)$ makes sense by the lemma and clearly implements the unitary equivalence of bimodules.

## 31. Connes fusion with the vector representation

In the previous chapter we proved that if $\left(a_{i j}\right),\left(b_{i j}\right)$ are vector primary fields smeared in intervals $I$ and $J$ in $S^{1} \backslash\{1\}$ with $J$ anticlockwise after $I$, then:
(a) $b_{g f} a_{g_{1} f}^{*}=\sum v_{h} a_{h g}^{*} b_{h g_{1}}$ with $v_{h} \neq 0$ if $h>g, g_{1}$ is permissible.
(b) $b_{g f} a_{f h}=\sum \mu_{f_{1}} a_{g f_{1}} b_{f_{1} h}$ with $\mu_{f_{1}} \neq 0$ if $h<f_{1}<g$.

We use these braiding relations to establish the main technical result required in the computation of $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}$. This answers the following natural question. The operator $a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}$ on $H_{0}$ commutes with $\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$, so lies in $\pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$. Thus, by local equivalence, we have the right to ask what its image is under the natural isomorphism $\pi_{f}: \pi_{0}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \pi_{f}\left(\mathscr{L}_{I} G\right)^{\prime \prime}$.

Theorem (transport formula). $\pi_{f}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f}$ with $\lambda_{g}>0$.
Remark. It is possible, using induction or the braiding computations in [43], to obtain the precise values of the coefficients. Since the precise numerical values are not important for us, we have preferred a proof which makes it manifest why the right hand side must have the stated form with strictly positive coefficients $\lambda_{g}$.

Proof. (1) We proceed by induction on $|f|=\sum f_{i}$. Suppose that $\pi_{f}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f}$ and $\pi_{f}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} b_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} b_{g f}^{*} b_{g f}$ with $\lambda_{g}>0$. Polarising the second identity, we get $\pi_{f}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} b_{\square 0}^{\prime}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} b_{g f}^{*} b_{g f}^{\prime}$. In particular if $x \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, we may take $b_{i j}^{\prime}=\pi_{i}(x) b_{i j} \pi_{j}(x)^{*}$ and thus obtain

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} \pi_{\square}(x) b_{\square 0} \pi_{0}(x)^{*}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} b_{g f}^{*} \pi_{g}(x) b_{g f} \pi_{f}(x)^{*}
$$

Since $\pi_{f}\left(\pi_{0}(x)^{*}\right)=\pi_{f}(x)^{*}$, we may cancel $\pi_{f}(x)$ on both sides to get

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} \pi_{\square}(x) b_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} b_{g f}^{*} \pi_{g}(x) b_{g f} .
$$

(2) Take $x \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$. By the braiding relations and (1), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_{g f}^{*} \pi_{g}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} \pi_{\square}(x) b_{\square 0}\right) a_{g f} & =\pi_{f}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} \pi_{\square}(x) b_{\square 0}\right) a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f} \\
& =\sum_{g_{1}} \sum_{h, k} \lambda_{g_{1}} v_{h} \mu_{k} b_{g_{1} f}^{*} a_{h g_{1}}^{*} a_{h k} \pi_{k}(x) b_{k f} .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $x_{i} \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, let $Y=\left(y_{i j}\right)$ be the operator-valued matrix with entries $y_{i j}=a_{g f}^{*} \pi_{g}\left(b_{\square 0}^{*} \pi_{\square}\left(x_{i}^{-1} x_{j}\right) b_{\square 0}\right) a_{g f}$. Then $Y$ is positive, so that $\sum\left(y_{i j} \xi_{j}, \xi_{i}\right) \geq 0$
for $\xi_{i} \in H_{f}$. Substituting the expression on the left hand side above, this gives

$$
\sum_{i, j} \sum_{g_{1}} \lambda_{g_{1}}\left(b_{g_{1} f}^{*} \pi_{g_{1}}\left(x_{i}^{-1}\right)\left(\sum v_{h} \mu_{k} a_{h g_{1}}^{*} a_{h k}\right) \pi_{k}\left(x_{i}\right) b_{k f} \xi_{j}, \xi_{i}\right) \geq 0 .
$$

On the other hand, von Neumann density implies that $\pi\left(\mathscr{L}_{J} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{J^{c}} G\right)^{\prime \prime}=\pi(\mathscr{L} G)^{\prime \prime}$ for any positive energy representation at level $\ell$. This implies that vectors of the form $\eta=\left(\eta_{k}\right)$, where $\eta_{k}=\pi_{k}(x) b_{k f} \xi$ with $\xi \in H_{f}$ and $x \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, span a dense subset of $\bigoplus H_{k}$. But from the above equation we have $\sum \lambda_{g_{1}} v_{h} \mu_{k}\left(a_{h k} \eta_{k}, a_{h g_{1}} \eta_{g_{1}}\right) \geq 0$, and this inequality holds for all choices of $\eta_{k}$. In particular, taking all but one $\eta_{g_{1}}$ equal to zero, we get $\lambda_{g_{1}} v_{h} \mu_{g_{1}}>0$. Thus in the expression $b_{g_{1} f} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f}=\sum_{h, k} v_{h} \mu_{k} a_{h g_{1}}^{*} a_{h k} b_{k f}$, we have $v_{h} \mu_{g_{1}}>0$.
(3) Now for $x \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{g_{1} f}^{*} \pi_{g_{1}}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right) \pi_{g_{1}}(x) b_{g_{1} f} & =b_{g_{1} f}^{*} \pi_{g_{1}}(x) b_{g_{1} f} \sum \lambda_{g} a_{g f}^{*} a_{g f} \\
& =\sum \lambda_{g} v_{h} \mu_{k} b_{g_{1} f}^{*} a_{h g_{1}}^{*} \pi_{h}(x) a_{h k} b_{k f}
\end{aligned}
$$

If $x_{i} \in \mathscr{L}_{J} G$, let $Z=\left(z_{i j}\right)$ be the operator-valued matrix with entries $z_{i j}=$ $b_{g_{1} f}^{*} \pi_{g_{1}}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right) \pi_{g_{1}}\left(x_{i}^{-1} x_{j}\right) b_{g_{1} f}$. Then $Z$ is positive, so that if $\xi_{i} \in H_{f}$, $\sum\left(z_{i j} \xi_{j}, \xi_{i}\right) \geq 0$. Let $\eta=\left(\eta_{k}\right)$ where $\eta_{k}=\sum \pi_{k}\left(x_{i}\right) b_{k f} \xi_{i}$. As above, von Neumann density implies the vectors $\eta$ are dense in $\oplus H_{k}$. Moreover we have

$$
\sum \lambda_{g} v_{h} \mu_{k}\left(a_{h k} \eta_{k}, a_{h g_{1}} \eta_{g_{1}}\right)=\left(\pi_{g_{1}}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right) \eta_{g_{1}}, \eta_{g_{1}}\right)
$$

Since this is true for all $\eta_{k}$ 's, all the terms with $k \neq g_{1}$ must give a zero contribution and

$$
\left(\pi_{g_{1}}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right) \eta_{g_{1}}, \eta_{g_{1}}\right)=\sum \lambda_{g} v_{h} \mu_{g_{1}}\left(a_{h g_{1}} \eta_{g_{1}}, a_{h g_{1}} \eta_{g_{1}}\right) .
$$

But we already saw that $v_{h} \mu_{g_{1}}>0$ and hence $\pi_{g_{1}}\left(a_{\square 0}^{*} a_{\square 0}\right)=\sum \Lambda_{h} a_{h g_{1}}^{*} a_{h g_{1}}$, with $\Lambda_{h}>0$, as required.

Corollary. If $H_{f}$ is any irreducible positive energy representation of level $\ell$, then as positive energy bimodules we have

$$
H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f} \cong \bigoplus H_{g}
$$

where $g$ runs over all permissible Young diagrams that can be obtained by adding a box to $f$. Moreover the action of $\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$ on $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}$ extends uniquely to an action of $\mathscr{L} G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Proof. Let $\mathscr{X}_{0} \subset \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{1 c} G}\left(H_{0}, H_{\square}\right)$ be the linear span of intertwiners $x=\pi_{\square}(h) a_{\square 0}$, where $h \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$ and $a$ is a vector primary field supported in $I$. Since $x \Omega=\left(\pi_{\square}(h) a_{\square 0} \pi_{0}(h)^{*}\right) \pi_{0}(h) \Omega$, it follows from the Reeh-Schlieder theorem that $\mathscr{X}_{0} \Omega$ is dense in $\mathscr{X}_{0} H_{0}$. But then the von Neumann density argument (for example) implies that $\mathscr{X}_{0} \Omega$ is dense in $H_{\square}$. If $x=\sum \pi_{\square}\left(h^{(j)}\right) a_{\square 0}^{(j)} \in \mathscr{X}_{0}$, set $x_{g f}=\sum \pi_{g}\left(h^{(j)}\right) a_{g f}^{(j)}$. Let $y \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, H_{f}\right)$. By the transport formula

$$
\left(x^{*} x y^{*} y \Omega, \Omega\right)=\left(y^{*} \pi_{f}\left(x^{*} x\right) y \Omega, \Omega\right)=\sum_{g} \lambda_{g}\left(x_{g f}^{*} x_{g f} y \Omega, y \Omega\right)=\sum_{g} \lambda_{g}\left\|x_{g f} y \Omega\right\|^{2}
$$

This formula shows that $x_{g f}$ is independent of the expression for $x$. More importantly, by polarising we get an isometry $U$ of the closure of $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ in $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}$ into $\oplus H_{g}$, sending $x \otimes y$ to $\bigoplus \lambda_{g}^{1 / 2} x_{g f} y \Omega$. By the Hilbert space continuity lemma, $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ is dense in $H_{\square} \boxtimes H_{f}$. Since each of the maps $x_{g f}$ can be non-zero, Schur's lemma implies that $U$ is surjective and hence a unitary. The action of $\mathscr{L}^{ \pm 1} G$ extends uniquely to $\mathscr{L} G$ by Schur's lemma. The extension to $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ is uniquely determined by the fact that $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ has to fix the lowest energy subspaces of each irreducible summand of $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{\square}$.

## 32. Connes fusion with exterior powers of the vector representation

We now extend the methods of the previous section to the exterior powers $\lambda^{k} V=V_{k}$. We shall simply write $[k]$ for the corresponding signature, i.e. $k$ rows with one box in each. For $a \in L^{2}(I, V)$, we shall write $\phi_{g f}(a)$ for $\phi_{g f}^{\square}\left(e_{-\alpha_{g f}} a\right)$, where $\alpha_{g f}=\left(\Delta_{g}-\Delta_{f}-\Delta_{\square}\right) / 2(N+\ell)$ is the phase anomaly introduced in Section 29. For any path $P$ of length $k$, $f_{0}<f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}$ with $f_{i}$ permissible, we define $a_{P}=\phi_{f_{k} f_{k-1}}\left(a_{k}\right) \cdots \phi_{f_{1} f_{0}}\left(a_{1}\right)$ for $a_{i} \in L^{2}(I, V)$. In particular we let $P_{0}$ be the path $0<[1]<[2]<\cdots<[k]$.

Theorem. If $a_{i}, b_{i}$ are test functions in $L^{2}(I, V)$, then

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b_{P_{0}}^{*} a_{P_{0}}\right)=\sum_{g>k}\left(\sum_{P: f \rightarrow g} \lambda_{P}(g) b_{P}\right)^{*}\left(\sum_{P: f \rightarrow g} \lambda_{P}(g) a_{P}\right),
$$

where $P$ ranges over all paths $f_{0}=f<f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}=g$ with each $f_{i}$ permissible and where for fixed $g$ either $\lambda(g)=0$ or $\lambda_{P}(g) \neq 0$ for all $P$.

Proof. (1) The linear span of vectors $\bigoplus_{f_{k}>f_{k-1}>\cdots>f_{1}>f} \phi_{f_{k} f_{k-1}}\left(a_{k}\right) \phi_{f_{k-1} f_{k-2}}$ $\left(a_{k-1}\right) \cdots \phi_{f_{1} f}\left(a_{1}\right) \xi$ with $a_{j} \in L^{2}\left(I_{j}, V\right)$ (where $\left.I_{j} \subseteq I\right)$ and $\xi \in H_{f}$ is dense in $\bigoplus_{f_{k}>f_{k-1}>\cdots>f_{1}>f} H_{f_{k}}$.

Proof. We prove the result by induction on $k$. For $k=1$, let $H$ denote the closure of this subspace so that $H$ is invariant under $\mathscr{L}^{ \pm 1} G$ and hence $\mathscr{L} G$. By Schur's lemma $H$ must coincide with $\bigoplus_{f_{1}>f} H_{f_{1}}$ as required. By induction
the linear span of vectors $\oplus_{f_{k-1}>\cdots>f_{1}>f} \phi_{f_{k-1} f_{k-2}}\left(a_{k-1}\right) \cdots \phi_{f_{1} f}\left(a_{1}\right) \xi$ with $a_{i} \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $\xi \in H_{f}$ is dense in $\bigoplus_{f_{k-1}>\cdots>f_{1}>f} H_{f_{k-1}}$. The proof is completed by noting that if $g$ is fixed and $h_{1}, \ldots, h_{m}<g$ (not necessarily distinct) then the vectors $\bigoplus \phi_{g h_{i}}(a) \xi_{i}$ with $a \in L^{2}(I, V)$ and $\xi_{i} \in H_{h_{i}}$ span a dense subspace of $H_{g} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{m}$. Again the closure of the subspace is $\mathscr{L} G$ invariant and the result follows by Schur's lemma, because the $\xi_{i}$ 's vary independently.
(2) We have

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b_{P_{0}}^{*} a_{P_{0}}\right)=\sum_{g>_{k} f} \sum_{P, Q: f \rightarrow g} \mu_{P Q}(g) b_{P}^{*} a_{Q},
$$

where $g$ ranges over all permissible signatures that can be obtained by adding $k$ boxes to $f$ and $P, Q$ range over all permissible paths $g=f_{k}>$ $f_{k-1}>\cdots>f_{1}>f$ and $\mu(g)=\left(\mu_{P Q}(g)\right)$ is a non-negative matrix.

Proof. We assume the result by induction on $|f|=\sum f_{i}$. By polarisation, it is enough to prove the result with $b_{j}=a_{j}$ for all $j$. If $h>f$, let $x_{h f}=\phi_{h f}(c)$ with $c \in L^{2}\left(I^{c}, V\right)$ and $y=a_{P_{0}}$. Then for $f^{\prime}>f$ fixed, $x_{f^{\prime} f} \pi_{f}\left(y^{*} y\right)=$ $\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(y^{*} y\right) x_{f^{\prime} f}$. Substituting for $\pi_{f}\left(y^{*} y\right)$ and using the braiding relations with vector primary fields and their duals, $x_{f^{\prime} f} \pi_{f}\left(y^{*} y\right)$ can be rewritten as

$$
x_{f^{\prime} f} \pi_{f}\left(y^{*} y\right)=\sum_{g^{\prime}} \sum_{f_{1}>f} \sum_{P, Q} \mu_{P, Q}\left(g^{\prime}\right) a_{P}^{*} a_{Q} x_{f_{1} f}
$$

where $g^{\prime}$ ranges over signatures obtained by adding $k$ boxes to $f^{\prime}, P$ ranges over paths $f^{\prime}<h_{1}<\cdots<h_{k}=g^{\prime}$ and $Q$ ranges over paths $f_{1}<h_{1}<\cdots<h_{k}=g^{\prime}$. By (1), the vectors $\oplus_{f_{1}>f} x_{f_{1} f} H_{f}$ span a dense subset of $\bigoplus_{f_{1}>f} H_{f_{1}}$. Since $x_{f^{\prime} f} \pi_{f}\left(y^{*} y\right)=\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(y^{*} y\right) x_{f^{\prime} f}$, it follows that $\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(y^{*} y\right)=\sum_{g^{\prime}} \sum_{f_{1}>f} \sum_{P, Q} \mu_{P, Q}\left(g^{\prime}\right) a_{P}^{*} a_{Q}$. Since $\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(y^{*} y\right)$ lies in $B\left(H_{f^{\prime}}\right)$, only terms with $f_{1}=f^{\prime}$ appear in the above expression so that

$$
\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(y^{*} y\right)=\sum_{g^{\prime}} \sum_{P, Q} \mu_{P, Q}\left(g^{\prime}\right) a_{P}^{*} a_{Q}
$$

where $P$ and $Q$ range over paths from $f^{\prime}$ to $g^{\prime}$. Now suppose $z=y_{1}+\cdots+y_{m}$ with $y_{i}$ having the same form as $y$. Then

$$
\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(z^{*} z\right)=\sum_{g^{\prime}} \sum_{P, Q} \mu_{P, Q}\left(g^{\prime}\right) \sum_{i, j} a_{P, i}^{*} a_{Q, j}
$$

But $\left(\pi_{f^{\prime}}\left(z^{*} z\right) \xi, \xi\right) \geq 0$ for $\xi \in H_{f^{\prime}}$ and the linear span of vectors $\bigoplus_{Q} a_{Q} \xi$ is dense in $\oplus_{Q} H_{g^{\prime}}$. Fixing $g^{\prime}$, it follows that $\sum \mu_{P, Q}\left(g^{\prime}\right)\left(\xi_{P}, \xi_{Q}\right) \geq 0$ for all choices of $\xi_{P}$ in $H_{g^{\prime}}$. Taking all the $\xi_{P}$ 's proportional to a fixed vector in $H_{g^{\prime}}$, we deduce that $\mu\left(g^{\prime}\right)$ must be a non-negative matrix.
(3) If $g>k f$ is permissible, then $\mu(g)$ has rank at most one; otherwise $\mu(g)=0$. If $\mu(g) \neq 0$, then $\mu_{P Q}(g)=\overline{\lambda_{P}(g)} \lambda_{Q}(g)$ with $\lambda_{P}(g) \neq 0$ for all $P$.

Proof. We have

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b^{*} a\right)=\sum_{g>_{k} f} \sum_{P, Q: f \rightarrow g} \mu_{P Q}(g) b_{P} a_{Q}^{*},
$$

where $a=a_{P_{0}}$ and $b=b_{P_{0}}$. We choose $a_{j}$ to be concentrated in disjoint intervals $I_{j}$ with $I_{j}$ preceding $I_{j+1}$ going anticlockwise. Fix $i$ and let $a^{\prime}, a_{Q}^{\prime}$ be the intertwiners resulting from swapping $a_{i}$ and $a_{i+1}$. Then $a^{\prime}=\delta_{-} a$ where $\delta_{-} \neq 0$ while either $a_{Q}^{\prime}=\alpha_{Q} a_{Q}+\beta_{Q} a_{Q_{1}}$ and $a_{Q_{1}}^{\prime}=\gamma_{Q} a_{Q}+\delta_{Q} a_{Q_{1}}$, with $\alpha_{Q}, \beta_{Q}, \gamma_{Q}, \delta_{Q} \neq 0$, or $a_{Q}^{\prime}=\delta_{ \pm} a_{Q}$. Here if $Q$ is the path $f<f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}=g$, then $Q_{1}$ is the other possible path $f<f_{1}^{\prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime}=g$ with $f_{j}^{\prime}=f_{j}$ for $j \neq i$. In the second case, $\delta_{+}$occurs if $f_{i+1}$ is obtained by adding two boxes to the same row of $f_{i-1}$ while $\delta_{-}$occurs if they are added to the same column.

Now we still have $\pi_{f}\left(b^{*} a^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{g>_{k} f} \sum_{P: f \rightarrow g} \mu_{P Q}(g) b_{P}^{*} a_{P}^{\prime}$. If $Q$ and $Q_{1}$ are distinct, it follows that $\delta_{-} \mu_{P Q}=\alpha_{Q} \mu_{P Q}+\gamma_{Q} \mu_{P Q_{1}}$ and $\delta_{-} \mu_{P Q}=\beta_{Q} \mu_{P Q}+$ $\delta_{Q_{1}} \mu_{P Q_{1}}$ for all $P$. In the case where $Q_{1}=Q$, we get $\delta_{-} \mu_{P Q}=\delta_{ \pm} \mu_{P Q}$. Now for a vector $\left(\lambda_{Q}\right)$, consider the equations $\delta_{-} \lambda_{Q}=\alpha_{Q} \lambda_{Q}+\gamma_{Q} \lambda_{Q_{1}}$ and $\delta_{-} \lambda_{Q_{1}}=$ $\beta_{Q} \lambda_{Q}+\delta_{Q} \lambda_{Q_{1}}$; or $\delta_{-} \lambda_{Q}=\delta_{ \pm} \lambda_{Q}$. These are satisfied when $\lambda_{Q}=\mu_{P Q}$. We claim that, if $g>_{k} f$, these equations have up to a scalar multiple at most one nonzero solution, with all entries non-zero, and otherwise only the zero solution. This shows that $\mu(g)$ has rank at most one with the stated form if $g>_{k} f$ and $\mu(g)=0$ otherwise.

We shall say that two paths are adjacent if one is obtained from the other by changing just one signature. We shall say that two paths $Q$ and $Q_{1}$ are connected if there is a chain of adjacent paths from $Q$ to $Q_{1}$. We will show below that any other path $Q_{1}$ from $f$ to $g$ is connected to $Q$. This shows on the one hand that if a path $Q$ is obtained by successively adding two boxes to the same row, we have $\delta_{-} \lambda_{Q}=\delta_{+} \lambda_{Q}$, so that $\lambda_{Q}=0$ since $\delta_{+} \neq \delta_{-}$; while on the other hand if $Q$ and $Q_{1}$ are adjacent, $\lambda_{Q_{1}}$ is uniquely determined by $\lambda_{Q}$ and is non-zero if $\lambda_{Q}$ is.

We complete the proof by showing by induction on $k$ that any two paths $f=f_{0}<f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}=g$ and $f=f_{0}^{\prime}<f_{1}^{\prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime}=g$ are connected. The result is trivial for $k=1$. Suppose the result is known for $k-1$. Given two paths $f=f_{0}<f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}=g$ and $f=f_{0}^{\prime}<f_{1}^{\prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime}=g$, either $f_{1}=f_{1}^{\prime}$ or $f_{1} \neq f_{1}^{\prime}$. If $f_{1}=f_{1}^{\prime}=h$, the result follows because the paths $h=f_{1}<\cdots<f_{k}=g$ and $h=f_{1}^{\prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime}=g$ must be connected by the induction hypothesis. If $f_{1} \neq f_{1}^{\prime}$, there is a unique signature $f_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ with $f_{2}^{\prime \prime}>f_{1}, f_{1}^{\prime}$. We can then find a path $f_{2}^{\prime \prime}<f_{3}^{\prime \prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime \prime}=g$. The paths $Q: f<f_{1}<f_{2}^{\prime \prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime \prime}=g$ and $Q_{1}^{\prime}: f<f_{1}^{\prime}<f_{2}^{\prime \prime}<\cdots<f_{k}^{\prime \prime}=g$ are adjacent. By induction $Q$ is connected to $Q^{\prime}$ and $Q_{1}$ is connected to $Q_{1}^{\prime}$. Hence $Q$ is connected to $Q_{1}$, as required.

Corollary. $H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}=\bigoplus_{g>_{k} f, \lambda(g) \neq 0} H_{g} \leq \bigoplus_{g>_{k} f} H_{g}$.
Proof. If $h \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$, then we have

$$
\pi_{f}\left(b_{P_{0}}^{*} \pi_{[k]}(h) a_{P_{0}}\right)=\sum_{g>_{k} f}\left(\sum_{P: f \rightarrow g} \lambda_{P} b_{P}\right)^{*} \pi_{g}(h)\left(\sum_{P: f \rightarrow g} \lambda_{P} a_{P}\right) .
$$

Now the intertwiners $x=\pi_{[k]}(h) a_{P_{0}}$ span a subspace $\mathscr{X}_{0}$ of $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{1 c}}\left(H_{0}, H_{[k]}\right)$. As before the transport formula shows that the assignment $x \otimes y \mapsto \bigoplus_{g} \sum \lambda_{P}(g) \pi_{g}(h) a_{P} y \Omega$ extends to a linear isometry $T$ of $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ into $\bigoplus_{\lambda(g) \neq 0} H_{g} . T$ intertwines $\mathscr{L}^{ \pm 1} G$, so by Schur's lemma extends to an isometry of the closure of $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ in $H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}$ onto $\oplus_{\lambda(g) \neq 0} H_{g}$. On the other hand, by the argument used in the corollary in the previous section, $\mathscr{X}_{0} \Omega$ is dense in $H_{[k]}$. Therefore, by the Hilbert space continuity lemma, the image of $\mathscr{X}_{0} \otimes \mathscr{Y}$ is dense in $H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}$. Hence $H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}=\bigoplus_{\lambda(g) \neq 0} H_{g}$, as required.

## 33. The fusion ring

Our aim now is to show that if $H_{i}$ and $H_{j}$ are irreducible positive energy representations, then $H_{i} \boxtimes H_{j}=\bigoplus N_{i j}^{k} H_{k}$ where the fusion coefficients $N_{i j}^{k}$ are finite and to be determined.

Lemma (closure under fusion). (1) Each irreducible positive energy representation $H_{i}$ appears in some $H_{\square}^{\boxtimes} n$.
(2) The $H_{i}$ 's are closed under Connes fusion.

Proof. (1) Since $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{\square}=\bigoplus H_{g}$, it follows easily by induction that each $H_{g}$ is contained in $H_{\square}^{\boxtimes}$ for some $m$.
(2) Since $H_{f} \subset H_{\square}^{\boxtimes}{ }^{\square}$ for some $m$ and $H_{g} \subset H_{\square}^{\boxtimes}$ for some $n$, we have $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{g} \subset H_{\square}^{\boxtimes}{ }^{(m+n)}$. By induction $H_{\square}^{\boxtimes k}$ is a direct sum of irreducible positive energy bimodules. By Schur's lemma any subrepresentation of $H_{\square}^{\boxtimes(m+n)}$ must be a direct sum of irreducible positive energy bimodules. In particular this applies to $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{g}$, as required.

Corollary. If $X$ and $Y$ are positive energy representations, the action of $\mathscr{L}_{I} G \cdot \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$ on $X \boxtimes Y$ extends uniquely to an action of $\mathscr{L} G \rtimes \operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$.

Proof. The action extends uniquely to $\mathscr{L} G$ by Schur's lemma. The extension to $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ is uniquely determined by the fact that $\operatorname{Rot} S^{1}$ has to fix the lowest energy subspaces of each irreducible summand of $X \boxtimes Y$.

Braiding lemma. The map $B: \mathscr{X} \otimes \mathscr{Y} \rightarrow Y \boxtimes X, \quad B(x \otimes y)=R_{\pi}^{*}\left[R_{\pi}(y) R_{\pi}^{*}\right.$ $\left.\otimes R_{\pi}(x) R_{\pi}^{*}\right]$ extends to a unitary of $X \boxtimes Y$ onto $Y \boxtimes X$ intertwining the actions of $\mathscr{L} G$.

Proof. Note that the $B$ is well-defined, for rotation through $\pi$ interchanges $\mathscr{L}_{I} G$ and $\mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$. Hence $R_{\pi} x R_{\pi}^{*}$ lies in $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{I} G}\left(H_{0}, X\right)$ and $R_{\pi} y R_{\pi}^{*}$ lies in $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathscr{L}_{l} G}\left(H_{0}, Y\right)$. So $R_{\pi} y R_{\pi}^{*} \otimes R_{\pi} x R_{\pi}^{*}$ lies in $\mathscr{Y} \otimes \mathscr{X}$. Since $R_{\pi} \Omega=\Omega$, the map $B$ preserves the inner product. Interchanging the rôles of $X$ and $Y$, we get an inverse of $B$ which also preserves the inner product. Hence $B$ extends by continuity to a unitary of $X \boxtimes Y$ onto $Y \boxtimes X$. Finally, we check that $B$ has the correct intertwining property. Let $g \in \mathscr{L}_{I} G$ and $h \in \mathscr{L}_{I^{c}} G$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
B(g x \otimes h y) & =R_{\pi}^{*}\left[R_{\pi}(h y) R_{\pi}^{*} \otimes R_{\pi}(g x) R_{\pi}^{*}\right]=R_{\pi}^{*}\left[\left(h \circ r_{\pi}\right)\left(g \circ r_{\pi}\right)\left(R_{\pi} y R_{\pi}^{*} \otimes R_{\pi} x R_{\pi}^{*}\right)\right] \\
& =R_{\pi}^{*}\left(h \circ r_{\pi}\right)\left(g \circ r_{\pi}\right) R_{\pi}^{*} R_{\pi}\left[R_{\pi} y R_{\pi}^{*} \otimes R_{\pi} x R_{\pi}^{*}\right]=g h R_{\pi}^{*}\left[R_{\pi} y R_{\pi}^{*} \otimes R_{\pi} x R_{\pi}^{*}\right] \\
& =g h B(x \otimes y),
\end{aligned}
$$

as required.
Corollary 1. $X \boxtimes Y$ is isomorphic to $Y \boxtimes X$ as an $\mathscr{L} G$-module.
Let $\mathscr{R}$ be the representation ring of formal sums $\sum m_{i} H_{i}\left(m_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}\right)$ with multiplication extending fusion. $\mathscr{R}$ is called the fusion ring (at level $\ell$ ).

Corollary 2. The fusion ring $\mathscr{R}$ is a commutative ring with an identity.
Proof. $\mathscr{R}$ is commutative by the braiding lemma and closed under multiplication by the previous lemmas. Multiplication is associative because fusion is.

## 34. The general fusion rules (Verlinde formulas)

In order to determine the general coefficients $N_{i j}^{k}$ in the fusion rules $H_{i} \boxtimes H_{j}=\bigoplus N_{i j}^{k} H_{k}$, we first have to determine the structure of the fusion ring. Before doing so, we will need some elementary facts on the affine Weyl group. The integer lattice $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}^{N}$ acts by translation on $\mathbb{R}^{N}$. The symmetric group $S_{N}$ acts on $\mathbb{R}^{N}$ by permuting the coordinates and normalises $\Lambda$, so we get an action of the semidirect product $\Lambda \rtimes S_{N}$. The subgroup $\Lambda_{0}=\left\{(N+\ell)\left(m_{i}\right): \sum m_{i}=0\right\} \subset \Lambda$ is invariant under $S_{N}$, so we can consider the semidirect product $W=\Lambda_{0} \rtimes S_{N}$. The sign of a permutation defines a homomorphism det of $S_{N}$, and hence $W$, into $\{ \pm 1\}$.

Lemma. (a) $\left\{\left(x_{i}\right):\left|x_{i}-x_{j}\right| \leq N+\ell\right\}$ forms a fundamental domain for the action of $\Lambda_{0}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{N}$.
(b) $D=\left\{\left(x_{i}\right): x_{1} \geq \cdots \geq x_{N}, x_{1}-x_{N} \leq N+\ell\right\}$ forms a fundamental domain for the action of $\Lambda_{0} \rtimes S_{N}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{N}$.
(c) A point is in the orbit of the interior of $D$ consists of points iff its stabiliser is trivial. For every other point $x$ there is an transposition $\sigma \in S_{N}$ such that $\sigma(x)-x$ lies in $\Lambda_{0}$.

Proof. (a) Take $\left(x_{i}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{N}$. Write $x_{i}=a_{i}+m_{i}$ with $0 \leq a_{i}<N+\ell$ and $m_{i} \in(N+\ell) \mathbb{Z}$. Without loss of generality, we may assume that $a_{1} \leq \cdots \leq a_{N}$. Now $\left(m_{i}\right)$ can be written as the sum of a term $\left(b_{i}\right)=(N+\ell)(M, M, \ldots, M, M-1, M-1, \ldots, M-1)$ and an element $\left(c_{i}\right)$ of $\Lambda_{0}$. Thus $x=a+b+c$ with $c \in \Lambda_{0}$. It is easy to see that $y=a+b$ satisfies $\left|y_{i}-y_{j}\right| \leq N+\ell$. (b) follows immediately from (a) since the domain there is invariant under $S_{N}$. Finally, since $\operatorname{int}(D)=\left\{\left(x_{i}\right): x_{1}>\cdots>\right.$ $\left.x_{N}, x_{1}-x_{N}<N+\ell\right\}$, it is easy to see that any point in $\operatorname{int}(D)$ has trivial stabiliser. If $x \in \partial D$, then either $x_{i}=x_{i+1}$ for some $i$, in which case $\sigma=(i, i+1)$ fixes $x$; or $x_{1}-x_{N}=N+\ell$, in which case $\sigma=(1, N)$ satisfies $\sigma(x)-x=(-N-\ell, 0, \ldots, 0, N+\ell)$. Thus (c) follows for points in $D$ and therefore in general, since $D$ is a fundamental domain.

Corollary. Let $\delta=(N-1, N-2, \ldots, 1,0)$. Then $m \in \mathbb{Z}^{N}$ has trivial stabiliser in $W=\Lambda_{0} \rtimes S_{N}$ iff $m=\sigma(f+\delta)$ for a unique $\sigma \in W$ and signature $f_{1} \geq f_{2} \geq \cdots f_{N}$ with $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell ; m$ has non-trivial stabiliser iff there is a transposition $\sigma \in S_{N}$ such that $\sigma(m)-m$ lies in $\Lambda_{0}$.

Proof. In the first case $m=\sigma(x)$ for $\sigma \in W$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}^{N}$ with $x_{1}>\ldots>x_{N}$ and $x_{1}-x_{N}<N+\ell$. Since the $x_{i}$ 's must be integers, we can write $x=f+\delta$ with $f_{1} \geq \cdots \geq f_{N}$. Then $f_{1}-f_{N}=x_{1}-x_{N}-(N-1)<\ell+1$, so that $f_{1}-f_{N} \leq \ell$.

Recall that the character of $V_{f}$ is given by Weyl's character formula $\chi_{f}(z)=\operatorname{det}\left(z_{i}^{f_{j}+\delta_{j}}\right) / \operatorname{det}\left(z_{i}^{\delta_{j}}\right)$. Let $S$ be the space of permitted (normalised) signatures at level $\ell$, i.e. $S=\left\{h: h_{1} \geq \cdots \geq h_{N}, h_{1}-h_{N} \leq \ell, h_{N}=0\right\}$. We now define a ring $\mathscr{S}$ as follows. For $h \in S$, let $D(h) \in S U(N)$ be the diagonal matrix with $D(h)_{k k}=\exp \left(2 \pi i\left(h_{k}+N-k-H\right) /(N+\ell)\right)$ where $H=\left(\sum h_{k}+\right.$ $N-k) / N$ and set $\mathscr{T}=\{D(h): h \in S\}$. We denote the set of functions on $\mathscr{T}$ by $\mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$. Let $\theta: R(S U(N)) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$ be the map of restriction of characters, i.e. $\theta([V])=\left.\chi_{V}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}$. By definition $\theta$ is a ring *-homomorphism. Set $\mathscr{S}=\theta(R(S U(N)))$ and let $\theta_{f}=\theta\left(V_{f}\right)$.

Proposition. (1) $\left.X_{\sigma(f+\delta)-\delta}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}=\left.\operatorname{det}(\sigma) X_{f}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}$ for $\sigma \in S_{N}$ and $\left.X_{f+m}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}=\left.X_{f}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}$ for $m \in \Lambda_{0}$.
(2) The $\theta_{f}$ 's with $f$ permissible form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\mathscr{S}$.
(3) $\operatorname{ker}(\theta)$ is the ideal in $R(S U(N))$ generated by $V_{f}$ with $f_{1}-f_{N}=\ell+1$.
(4) If $V_{f} \otimes V_{g}=\bigoplus N_{f g}^{h} V_{h}$, then $\theta_{f} \theta_{g}=\sum N_{f g}^{h} \operatorname{det}\left(\sigma_{h}\right) \theta_{h^{\prime}}$ where $h$ ranges over those signatures in the classical rule for which there is a $\sigma_{h} \in \Lambda_{0} \rtimes S_{N}$ (necessarily unique) such that $h^{\prime}=\sigma_{h}(h+\delta)-\delta$ is permissible.
(5) If $f, h$ are permissible, then $\mid\left\{g_{1}: g_{1}\right.$ permissible, $\left.f<g_{1}<_{k} h\right\} \mid=$ $\mid\left\{g_{2}: g_{2}\right.$ permissible, $\left.f<_{k} g_{2}<h\right\} \mid$.

Proof. The statements in (1) follow immediately from the form of the $D(h)$ 's. The $V_{[k]}$ 's generate $R(S U(N))$ and, if $f_{1}-f_{N}=\ell+1$, it is easy to see that $\chi_{f}(t)=0$ for all $t \in \mathscr{T}$ : for $f_{1}+N-1-f_{N}=N+\ell$ and hence the numer-
ator in $\chi_{f}(t)$ must vanish. The $\theta_{f}$ 's with $f$ permissible are therefore closed under multiplication by $\theta_{[k]}$ 's. Since the $\theta_{[k]}$ 's generate $\mathscr{S}$, the $\mathbb{Z}$-linear span of the $\theta_{f}$ 's with $f$ permissible must equal $\mathscr{S}$. The characters $\chi_{[k]}$ distinguish the points of $\mathscr{T}$ and $\chi_{[0]}=1$. Hence $\mathscr{S}_{\mathbb{C}}$ is a unital subalgebra of $\mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$ separating points. So given $x, y \in \mathscr{T}$, we can find $f \in \mathscr{S}_{\mathbb{C}}$ such that $f(x)=1$ and $f(y)=0$. Multiplying these together for all $y \neq x$, it follows that $\mathscr{S}_{\mathbb{C}}$ contains $\delta_{x}$ and hence coincides with $\mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$. So the $\theta_{f}$ 's must be linearly independent over $\mathbb{C}$, so a fortiori over $\mathbb{Z}$. This proves (2). Let $I \subset R(S U(N))$ be the ideal generated by the $\left[V_{g}\right]$ 's with $g_{1}-g_{N}=\ell+1$. Since $R(S U(N))$ is generated by the $V_{[k]}$ 's and we have the tensor product rule $V_{f} \otimes V_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g>_{k} f} V_{g}$, it follows that $R(S U(N)) / I$ is spanned by the image of the $\left[V_{f}\right]$ 's as a $\mathbb{Z}$-module. But $I \subseteq \operatorname{ker}(\theta)$ and the $\theta\left(\left[V_{f}\right]\right)$ 's are linearly independent over $\mathbb{Z}$. Hence the images of the $\left[V_{f}\right]$ 's give a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $R(S U(N)) / I$ and therefore $I=\operatorname{ker}(\theta)$, so (3) follows. The assertion in (4) follows from (1) by applying $\theta$ and using the corollary to the lemma above. In fact, if $h+\delta$ has non-trivial stabiliser, we can find a transposition $\sigma \in S_{N}$ such that $\sigma(h+\delta)-h-\delta$ lies in $\Lambda_{0}$. Hence $X_{h}(t)=-X_{\sigma(h+\delta)-\delta}(t)=-X_{h}(t)$, so that $\chi_{h}(t)=X_{h}(t)=0$ for all $t \in \mathscr{T}$. When the stabiliser is trivial, we clearly have $\theta_{h}=\operatorname{det}\left(\sigma_{h}\right) \theta_{h^{\prime}}$. Finally (5) follows by comparing coefficients of $\theta_{h}$ in $\theta_{f} \theta_{[k]} \theta_{\square}=\sum_{g_{1}>_{k} f} \sum_{h>g_{1}} \theta_{h}=\sum_{g_{2}>f} \sum_{h>_{k} g_{2}} \theta_{h}$.

Theorem. (1) $H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}=\bigoplus_{g>k} f H_{g}$, where the sum is over permissible $g$.
(2) The $\mathbb{Z}$-linear map $\operatorname{ch}: \mathscr{R} \rightarrow \mathscr{S}$ defined by $\operatorname{ch}\left(H_{f}\right)=\left.\chi_{f}\right|_{\mathscr{T}}$ is a ring isomorphism.
(3) The characters of $\mathscr{R}$ are given by $\left[H_{f}\right] \mapsto \operatorname{ch}\left(H_{f}, h\right)=\chi_{f}(z)$ for $z \in \mathscr{T}$.
(4) The fusion coefficients $N_{i j}^{k}$ 's can be computed using the multiplication rules for the basis $\operatorname{ch}\left(H_{f}\right)$ of $\mathscr{S}$.
(5) Each representation $H_{f}$ has a unique conjugate representation $\overline{H_{f}}$ such that $H_{f} \boxtimes \overline{H_{f}}$ contains $H_{0}$. In fact $\overline{H_{f}}=H_{f^{\prime}}$, where $f_{i}^{\prime}=-f_{N-i+1}$, and $H_{0}$ appears exactly once in $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{f^{\prime}}$. The map $H_{f} \mapsto \overline{H_{f}}$ makes $\mathscr{R}$ into an involutive ring and ch becomes $a *$-isomorphism.

Proof. (1) We know that $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{[k]} \leq \bigoplus_{g>k f} H_{g}$ with equality when $k=1$. We prove by induction on $|f|=\sum f_{j}$ that $H_{f} \boxtimes H_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g_{1}>k f} H_{g_{1}}$. It suffices to show that if this holds for $f$ then it holds for all $g$ with $g>f$. Tensoring by $H_{\square}$ and using part (5) of the preceding proposition, we get

$$
\bigoplus_{g>f} H_{g} \boxtimes H_{[k]}=\bigoplus_{g_{1}>k f} \bigoplus_{h>g_{1}} H_{h}=\bigoplus_{g>f} \bigoplus_{h>k g} H_{h} .
$$

Since $H_{g} \boxtimes H_{[k]} \leq \bigoplus_{h>_{k} g} H_{h}$, we must have equality for all $g$, completing the induction.
(2) Let ch be the $\mathbb{Z}$-linear isomorphism $\operatorname{ch}: \mathscr{R} \rightarrow \mathscr{S}$ extending $\operatorname{ch}\left(H_{f}\right)=\theta_{f}$.

Then by (1), $\operatorname{ch}\left(H_{[k]} \boxtimes H_{f}\right)=\theta_{[k]} \theta_{f}$. This implies that ch restricts to a ring homomorphism on the subring of $\mathscr{R}$ generated by the $H_{[k]}$ 's. On the other hand the $\theta_{[k]}$ 's generate $\mathscr{S}$, so the image of this subring is the whole of $\mathscr{S}$.

Since ch is injective, the ring generated by the $H_{[k]}$ 's must be the whole of $\mathscr{R}$ and ch is thus a ring homomorphism, as required.
(3) and (4) follow immediately from the isomorphism ch and the fact that $S_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\mathscr{T}}$.
(5) We put an inner product on $\mathscr{S}_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathscr{R}_{\mathbb{C}}$ by taking $\theta_{f}$ as an orthonormal basis, so that $\left(\theta_{f}, \theta_{g}\right)=\delta_{f g}$. We claim that $\left(\theta_{f} \theta_{g}, \theta_{h}\right)=\left(\theta_{g}, \overline{\theta_{f}} \theta_{h}\right)$ for all $\theta_{f}$. Note that $\overline{\theta_{f}}=\theta_{f^{\prime}}$ where $f_{i}^{\prime}=-f_{N-i+1}$. Let $\theta_{f}^{*}$ be the adjoint of multiplication by $\theta_{f}$. The multiplication rules for $\theta_{[k]}$ imply that $\theta_{[k]}^{*}=\overline{\theta_{[k]}}$ for $k=1, \ldots, N$. Thus the homomorphism $\theta_{f} \mapsto \bar{\theta}_{f}^{*}$ is the identity on a set of generators of $\mathscr{S}$ and therefore on the whole of $\mathscr{S}$, so the claim follows. In particular $\left(\theta_{f} \theta_{g}, \theta_{0}\right)=\left(\theta_{g}, \overline{\theta_{f}}\right)=\left(\theta_{g}, \theta_{f^{\prime}}\right)=\delta_{g f^{\prime}}$. Translating to $\mathscr{R}$, we retrieve all the assertions in (5).

The following results are immediate consequences of the theorem and preceding proposition.

Corollary 1 (Verlinde formulas [40, 21]. If the "classical" tensor product rules for $S U(N)$ are given by $V_{f} \otimes V_{g}=\bigoplus N_{f g}^{h} V_{h}$, then the "quantum" fusion rules for $\operatorname{LSU}(N)$ at level $\ell$ are given by

$$
H_{f} \boxtimes H_{g}=\oplus N_{f g}^{h} \operatorname{det}\left(\sigma_{h}\right) H_{h^{\prime}}
$$

where $h$ ranges over those signatures in the classical rule for which there is a $\sigma_{h} \in \Lambda_{0} \rtimes S_{N}$ (necessarily unique) such that $h^{\prime}=\sigma_{h}(h+\delta)-\delta$ is permissible.

Corollary 2 (Segal-Goodman-Wenzl rule [35, 14]). The map $V_{f} \mapsto H_{f}$ extends to $a *$-homomorphism of $R(S U(N)$ ) (the representation ring of $S U(N)$ ) onto the fusion ring $\mathscr{R}$. The kernel of this homomorphism is the ideal generated by the (non-permissible) representations $V_{f}$ with $f_{1}-f_{N}=\ell+1$.

## References

1. H. Araki, von Neumann algebras of local observables for free scalar field, J. Math. Phys. 5, 1-13. (1964)
2. H. Araki, On quasi-free states of CAR and Bogoliubov automorphisms, Publ. R.I.M.S. 6,385-442 (1970)
3. J. Baez, I. Segal and Z. Zhou, "Introduction to algebraic and constructive quantum field theory", Princeton University Press 1992
4. J. Bisognano and E. Wichmann, On the duality condition for a hermitian scalar field, J. Math. Phys. 16, 985-1007 (1975)
5. R. Borcherds, Vertex algebras, Kac-Moody algebras and the Monster, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S.A. 83, 3068-3071 (1986)
6. H. Borchers, A remark on a theorem of Misra, Commun. Math. Phys. 4, 315-323 (1967)
7. H. Borchers, The CPT theorem in two-dimensional theories of local observables, Commun. Math. Phys. 143, 315-323 (1992)
8. O. Bratteli and D. Robinson, "Operator algebras and quantum statistical mechanics", Vol. I, Springer 1979
9. A. Connes, "Non-commutative geometry" (Chapter V, Appendix B), Academic Press 1994
10. S. Doplicher, R. Haag and J. Roberts, Local observables and particle statistics I, II, Comm. Math. Phys. 23 (1971) 119-230 and 35, 49-85 (1974)
11. J. Glimm and A. Jaffe, "Quantum Physics", 2nd edition, Springer-Verlag 1987
12. P. Goddard and D. Olive, eds., "Kac-Moody and Virasoro algebras", Advanced Series in Math. Physics Vol. 3, World Scientific 1988
13. R. Goodman and N. Wallach, Structure and unitary cocycle representations of loop groups and the group of diffeomorphisms of the circle, J. Reine Angew. Math 347, 69-133 (1984)
14. F. Goodman and H. Wenzl, Littlewood Richardson coefficients for Hecke algebras at roots of unity, Adv. Math. 82, 244-265 (1990)
15. R. Haag, "Local quantum physics", Springer-Verlag 1992.
16. N. Hugenholtz and J. Wierenga, On locally normal states in quantum statistical mechanics, Commun. Math. Phys. 11 (1969), 183-197
17. E. Ince, "Ordinary differential equations", Dover 1956
18. V. Jones, Index for subfactors, Invent. math. 72, 1-25 (1983)
19. V. Jones, von Neumann algebras in mathematics and physics, Proc. I.C.M. Kyoto 1990, 121-138
20. R. Jost, "The general theory of quantised fields", A.M.S. 1965
21. V. Kac, "Infinite dimensional Lie algebras", 3rd edition, C.U.P. 1990
22. D. Kazhdan and G. Lusztig, Tensor structures arising from affine Lie algebras IV, Journal A.M.S. 7 (1994), 383-453
23. V. Knizhnik and A. Zamolodchikov, Current algebra and Wess-Zumino models in two dimensions, Nuc. Phys. B 247, 83-103 (1984)
24. P. Leyland, J. Roberts and D. Testard, Duality for quantum free fields, preprint, Luminy 1978
25. T. Loke, "Operator algebras and conformal field theory for the discrete series representations of Diff $S^{1} "$, thesis, Cambridge 1994
26. F. Murray and J. von Neumann, On rings of operators, Ann. Math. 37 (1936), 116-229.
27. T. Nakanishi and A. Tsuchiya, Level-rank duality of WZW models in conformal field theory, Comm. Math. Phys. 144, 351-372 (1992)
28. E. Nelson, "Topics in dynamics I: Flows", Princeton University Press 1969
29. S. Popa, "Classification of subfactors and their endomorphisms", C.B.M.S. lectures, A.M.S. 1995
30. A. Pressley and G. Segal, "Loop groups", O.U.P. 1986
31. M. Reed and B. Simon, "Methods of Mathematical Physics I: Functional analysis", Academic Press 1980
32. H. Reeh and S. Schlieder, Bemerkungen zur Unitarequivalenz von Lorentzinvarienten Feldern, Nuovo Cimento 22, 1051-1068 (1961)
33. M. Rieffel and A. van Daele, A bounded operator approach to Tomita-Takesaki theory, Pacific J. Math. 69, 187-221 (1977)
34. J.-L. Sauvageot, Sur le produit tensoriel relatif d'espaces d'Hilbert, J. Op. Theory 9, 237252
35. G. Segal, Notes on conformal field theory, unpublished manuscript
36. R. Streater and A. Wightman, "PCT, spin statistics and all that", Benjamin 1964
37. M. Takesaki, Conditional expectation in von Neumann algebra, J. Funct. Analysis 9, 306321 (1972)
38. A. Thomae, "Ueber die höheren hypergeometrischen Reihen, ..." Math. Ann. 2, 427-444 (1870)
39. A. Tsuchiya and Y. Kanie, Vertex operators in conformal field theory on $\mathbb{P}^{1}$ and monodromy representations of braid group, Adv. Studies in Pure Math. 16, 297-372 (1988)
40. E. Verlinde, Fusion rules and modular transformations in 2D conformal field theory, Nuclear Phys. B 300, 360-376 (1988)
41. A. Wassermann, Operator algèbras and conformal field theory, Proc. I.C.M. Zurich (1994), 966-979, Birkhäuser
42. A. Wassermann, with contributions by V. Jones, "Lectures on operator algebras and conformal field theory", Proceedings of Borel Seminar, Bern 1994, to appear
43. A. Wassermann, Operator algebras and conformal field theory II: Fusion for von Neumann algebras and loop groups, to appear
44. A. Wassermann, Operator algebras and conformal field theory IV: Loop groups, quantum invariant theory and subfactors, in preparation
45. H. Wenzl, Hecke algebras of type $A_{n}$ and subfactors, Invent. math. 92, 249-383 (1988)
46. H. Weyl, "The classical groups", Princeton University Press 1946
47. E. Whittaker and G. Watson, "A course of modern analysis", 4th edition, C.U.P. 1927.
48. V. Jones, Fusion en algèbres de von Neumann et groupes de lacets (d'après A. Wassermann), Séminaire Bourbaki 1994-95, No. 800
